

DECLARING THE END  
FROM THE BEGINNING



PRECEPT SIX

# DECLARING THE END

FROM THE BEGINNING

DAVID JENKINS



*Declaring the End from the Beginning*

Copyright © 2023 by David Jenkins. All rights reserved.

---

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any way by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording or otherwise without the prior permission of the author except as provided by USA copyright law.

The opinions expressed by the author are not necessarily those of URLink Print and Media.

---

1603 Capitol Ave., Suite 310 Cheyenne, Wyoming USA 82001  
1-888-980-6523 | [admin@urlinkpublishing.com](mailto:admin@urlinkpublishing.com)

URLink Print and Media is committed to excellence in the publishing industry.

Book design copyright © 2023 by URLink Print and Media. All rights reserved.

---

Published in the United States of America

Library of Congress Control Number: 2023919337

ISBN 978-1-68486-543-7 (Paperback)

ISBN 978-1-68486-545-1 (Hardback)

ISBN 978-1-68486-546-8 (Digital)

11.10.23

## Introduction

Introduction to the adventure we are getting ready to learn about.

## Precept Six

Just a quick look into as why this book is called precept six.

## Why?

In this chapter we will be looking into why our Father is doing what He is doing, and why we are here.

## Obedying Jesus

In this chapter we will be discovering what it truly means to obey Jesus. We will be learning how he never changes anything about the Old testament or our Father and His ways.

## The Word Became Flesh

In this chapter we will be showing how the word became flesh, At the same time, we will be putting to rest of the confusion as to how many thinks Jesus is God the Father. We will be showing how the King James Version of the Bible has definitively tells us that he or I am not. And we will be showing how I have become the walking word of God in the flesh.

## Being led out of Egypt

In this chapter we will be learning that the entire world is spiritually called Egypt, and that there are many that refuse to hear Moses to this day.

## Renewing your mind

We will be learning how I have completely renewed my mind over that past several years. This can be seen by my works and my appearance.

## Birthdays and holidays

We will be learning how important it is not to honor these days in the ways man celebrates them.

## Hearing our Father's Voice

We will be learning how to hear our Father's voice in this chapter. We will be taking you a few of "real time" lessons that our Father has put me through, and I will be explaining how He talks to everybody the same way He does me, all day, every day.

## Get Over Yourself

This chapter will show people how the rapture is concept that has nothing to do with our Father. We will be taking several areas of the Bible that people think it is saying the rapture is going to happen, and prove them wrong.

## Conclusion

Just a quick wrap of what we covered in this book, and closing with two complete Bible chapters.

# PRECEPT SIX

Congratulations are in order if you have read the previous books, and or precepts. This is not a republication. It is the original publication of this book or precept. It was while I was finishing this book or shortly after I sent in the manuscript, our Father put it on my conscience to republish the previous five books, and put them into a series or something like that. And because over the last several years, our Father has been teaching me precept upon precept, line upon line, little bit here and a little bit there, I have been writing these books as I have been going through these lessons.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: (Isaiah 28:9-10)

My new website is [davidofpsalm89.com](http://davidofpsalm89.com), where you can buy or download the manuscripts to all of the books if you cannot or do not want to pay for them. Now if you haven't been reading the previous precepts, you will find this book extremely offensive and you most likely will not finish it. If you do finish, you still will not understand how this is working. So let me do you a favor, if you haven't read the previous books, please put this one down and read the previous precepts.

The knowledge that I share with you in this precept took me by surprise as I was writing it. Our Father has been teaching me for years now and this book reveals the deepest, but yet even simple secrets that have been kept from the foundation of the world.

When our Father called me to the Bible in 2011, He brought it to my attention that people pick and choose certain areas of the Bible so that they can hear what they want to hear. Through all of these books, or precepts, we us all and everything of the King James Version of the Bible so that we can understand every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

This is why I have been saying that you all need all, or at least most of the precepts or books to understand our Father, what He is doing and why He is doing all that He is doing. I am the author of our salvation.

Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (Hebrews 12:2)

Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:7-9)

I did not willingly lay down my life back in 2016, and start hardcore, one on one, hands on training with our Father just so that the world will continue on. Our Father is bringing the end of the world upon us. And you will learn in this book or precept, that anyone without understanding will parish. If you think you can read this precept and all will be good, then let me remind you of a parable.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. (John 10:1-5)

By skipping the previous precepts, or books, you are trying to climbeth up by some other way then the way our Father designed it. You won't make it. I am the only way to the Father, and that is by reading what our Father has had me write.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)



# INTRODUCTION

Welcome! I am glad you have decided to read the 6<sup>th</sup> and final book of this series of books that our Father has had me write. Let me say right away, I know I said that the last book was my last one that I was going to write, but as I will be showing you all later, our Father was not through with all that He needed to say. So, I am writing another, and yes, He has said this is the last one this time.

Again, I give all the credit for me being able to write this book, to our Father. He is the true author of this book, and any other that He has had me write. I have always given Him credit for me being able to write these books, but in this one, you will be learning how and why I give Him the credit for writing them.

At this time, I want to remind everyone that our Father is working a works even though a man declare it to you.

Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you.  
(Habakkuk 1:5)

Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.  
(Acts 13:41)

Out of all the books that we have written, this one tells of secrets from the foundation of the world, that even took me by surprise even though I am the one that He has been teaching for several years now. I personally feel that the secrets that we are revealing now, are deeper

than all the other secrets that the other books reveal. I ask that you try to look at this in spiritual realm as you read this.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

This book is a continuation of the other five. I cannot cover everything that is in all the books in this one. On that note, some of the things that you will read and learn about here, might make you feel a little lost or confused. I have been writing these books as the lessons come to me. He has been teaching me a little at a time, and I try to share this with you. That is what this is all about.

For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. (Isaiah 28:10-13)

For some, this method works great, me being on of those that this works great with. But for many, this method will and does not work because during the duration of the lessons, they will give up, and turn their attention back towards man instead of our Father. I however, will not rely on man for anything. The Father is my Rock, He is my salvation, He is my everything. Without Him, I do not want life.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

If you are not aware of it, let me remind everyone that all my knowledge comes from the King James Version of the Bible. I am a man that has put all of my trust into this version of the Bible and our Father. You will be learning again of why I trust no man. We will be showing you why nobody should be putting their trust into man.

We will be showing how I have been hearing the engrafted word of the Bible. And we will be allowing you to be able to hear this also.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

Note that hearing this engrafted word does not guarantee that you will be saved. This is where a lot of people will need to realize that our Father has put it in our hearts not to understand all of this until the time of the end.

He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

By the time you are done reading this book, you will know for certain that the time of the end is upon us. We show you who our Father is, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. You will know why we are here and what is the meaning of life for all. To that, I need to mention that this is a time that many realize that they need to be retaught of everything that they thought they knew.

For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. (Hebrews 5:12)

I need to mention that if you have not read the other books that we have written, you might want to. The first book that we wrote back in 2015, is the milk of the word. By the time you have read all of them, you will be eating the flesh, and drinking the blood of the Son of man. But at the same time, you might not be able to understand the strong meat that is in this book. We will be showing how this works in this book.

This is where I am going to state that this is the most important time in history that you need to humble yourself, let down your guard, and be ready to learn things that you couldn't have even imagined. This is where we truly need to become as a little child, be eager and ready to learn the truth.

And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. (Matthew 18:2-5)

We will be showing you all how I knew no sin. We will be explaining why our Father kept me away from the Bible until He called me in 2011. We will be diving into answering a lot of why questions that many people have.

We will be looking at how this world is spiritually, Egypt. Once again, we will be showing how I seen the spiritual flood that covers the earth today. We will be learning how each of us can be led out of Egypt if we choose to hearken to our Father. But at the same time, if we continue to be disobedient, we will not be released from our sentence of death. Yes, you will again be learning how we all have been sentenced to death, and we do not start to live until the world ends. When we get to go home.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence  
also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:  
(Philippians 3:20)

We will be learning what it truly means when we hear that our conversations are in heaven. We will learn how we can ascend into heaven just by reading or listening to the scriptures. Once again, we will be showing how to find Jesus in the Old Testament. I am not referring to when we are told that he will come, I am talking about seeing Jesus for the first time in the Old Testament. We will be showing who the King of kings is. This among other things, was something that I was not able to explain until I was in the process of writing this book.

We will be showing how I have renewed my mind in the spiritual realm, and the physical realm. We will be showing you how to renew your mind and start to think like our Father does. You will start to learn how to see everything through a spiritual perspective. And the same time you be realizing that this is how our Father communicates with us all. At the same time, we will be going through some real time lessons that our Father has been putting me through. And Yes, we are finally going to share with you some of the ways that each person can hear our Father's voice. You will be surprised to learn that He talks to everybody, every day just as He does me. We are even going to be showing you all how He told me to take the picture that is on the front of this book.

We will be learning what it means to not add anything to the bible. We will be learning how most of the world adds many things without adding anything. We will be showing that by celebrating certain days, is adding to the word of God.

And then we will be taking a look at the rapture concept to see if this is what we are told will happen. We will be getting down to the bare bones about this and showing that this is a false teaching, but we will be learning of what will happen to those that teach this concept.

Let me remind everyone, the things that you will be reading and learning in this book will upset many. Many will be offended and or

choose not to read it. That choice is yours but at no time will I change anything of the scriptures from the King James Version of the Bible. At no time will try to teach you anything other than what our Father has taught me. I will be teaching the word of God, and with that being said, let me remind you of what we have been told all along.

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. (Hebrews 4:12)

I need to mention that there will be times that it will seem that I am repeating myself. There will be times that something might be said, and it might not quite fit in the area it is in. When I write these books, I do continue to listen to the Bible as I drive. There could be two or three chapter that I might have completed, then be listening to the Bible, and then think that something that I just heard, might fit well in something that I have already written. Because I refuse to reread everything that has already been written. It might be repeated or out of place. But I assure you, if you continue to read till the end of this book, it will fit together.

So, if your ready to learn of more secrets that have been kept since the foundation of the world. If your ready to learn more about our perfect Father, what He is doing, why He is doing what He is doing. If your ready to learn why you are here, than by all means, grab your preferred beverage, sit back and relax, and enjoy the adventure you are about to go on. And as always, ask our Father to help you understand what you are getting ready to learn, for He is the ultimate teacher.



# WHY?

This is a broad question, and when we get around little children, we can hear them ask this all the time. And yes, the question can be asked about anything. But in this chapter, we are going to be looking into why we are here. Why our Father has inspired the King James Version of the Bible to be written as it is. Why He has hidden this from the wise. Why He is using the foolishness of this world. Why He has chosen me to give this world an understanding of Him and what He is doing. Why I am writing another book even though I stated in the last book, that this was the last one that I was going to write. I am not telling you of the order these will be talked about, nor will this chapter cover all the why questions that some might have. There will be why questions answered throughout the entire book. The focus of this chapter is to capture the reasons as to why our Father is doing all that He is doing.

Before we tackle some of the reasons that our Father is doing what He is doing, I feel He is telling me to explain to you all why David got started in all of this in the first place. In other words, I am going to be telling you all how and when this all began for me back in 2011. But because my knowledge has grown so much since then, I will be showing the biblical context of how this all aligns with the King James Version of the Bible.

As explained in previous books, our Father called me to the Bible in 2011 with a radio program talking about this rapture concept. This caught my attention for I had never heard of this before. I was working a job at that time in which I would leave out in the evening, drive all night, and then sleep in a motel during the day. Then I would come back to the terminal the next night. When I got back, I went online

and started to look into this concept. Instead of showing several areas of the Bible that talk against this concept, I will just show you one that tells us definitively, that this is a false teaching taught by false teachers.

Wherefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from your arms, and will let the souls go, even the souls that ye hunt to make them fly. (Ezekiel 13:20)

Before 2011, I hadn't read a complete book in my life for leisure. Yes, I read books in school and such but nothing on my own time that I decided to read and was not being told to do so. I had almost completed one when I was 11 or 12 that was about a little boy and something to do with baseball. I remember almost finishing it, but for some reason, I just lost interest. In fact, before 2011, I knew absolutely nothing about our Father or the Bible. If you wanted to talk about either, I would shy away from the conversation for I just did not want to be caught up into something that I had no knowledge about.

Don't get me wrong, I believed in God because of something that happened to me when I was 17 or so. I had strep throat or something. I cannot say with all certainty that it was strep but my right gland in my throat was swelled up almost the size of a golf ball. That might be exaggerating a bit, but it was big and hurt. I cannot remember if there was a doctor appointment or not. I do remember that we lived next to this man-made church back then in the town of Macon, MO. This was on a Wednesday evening and a one of the young ladies that attended this church was outside talking with me. She told me that I should come to church and let them pray for me. Being a young teenager, with other thoughts on my mind, I told her that I would.

She was very beautiful, and I think she was a couple years older than me. I just wanted to be around her and maybe impress her by showing up. Now I had heard that this church did a lot of speaking in tongues and such so I was a little nervous for I hadn't been in a man-made church since I was a little boy. Putting that aside, I went

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

that evening and about 10 or so of us gathered around in a circle, holding hands. Then they spent some time praying in tongues, out loud. After it was over for the evening, I asked her of how long this should take. She replied, just believe it will work. I am like, okay, I will. That evening, I went to bed and asked God to make this work. I figured what the heck, why not. I went to sleep thinking it was going to work. I woke up the next morning pain free and a normal sized gland. I was like, wow! Now check this out.

Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe. (1 Corinthians 14:22)

So yes, that made me a believer in God, but I still never felt the desire to attend a church on a regular basis. Nor did I feel I wanted or needed to read the Bible. Now I am going to show something that catches my attention every time I listen to the Bible. I was 41 years old when our Father called me to the Bible and that is when I took a great interest into the scriptures. The first 40 years of my life, I pretty much just tried to live my life. Now listen to this.

And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. (Deuteronomy 8:2)

I could write an entire book on the things that happened within the first 40 years of my life. A lot of these things are talked about in the other books, and there will be a few in this one, but we are not going to get that far off topic right now. But with knowing what I do now, I realize why it was and is, when I made or make up my mind to do something, and would not and will not quit until it is done. I have been this way all my life and once I make up my mind to do

something, Most of the time, I prefer do things the hard way because I know it will be done correct. I do not cut corners. I have not and do not put my burdens on anyone else. I own my own faults. I cannot not say that I have never done as Adam and Eve and said it was someone else's fault for the things going wrong in my life, but with all certainty, I can say that I cannot remember when that last time was. I too, had to learn that everything that goes wrong in my own life, is a reaction to something that I have done.

Still to this day, I do sometimes wonder why our Father chose me to do all of this because I am no different than anyone else. I am no more deserving than anyone else. This is one why question that I cannot answer if you have the same question. But I am always reminded of this.

For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. (Romans 9:15)

It is His choice and not mine. I do know that I will forever be in debt to Him for all that He has done, doing, and will do.

This is where we learn what it means when we hear it said that he knew no sin.

For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. (2 Corinthians 5:21)

The first 40 years of my life, I had no idea what sin was. Before our Father called me to the Bible in 2011, I would not talk to anyone about it for I had no interest in talking about something that I knew nothing about.

Yet the Lord hath not given you an heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day. And I have led you forty years in the wilderness: your

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

clothes are not waxen old upon you, and thy shoe  
is not waxen old upon thy foot. Ye have not eaten  
bread, neither have ye drunk wine or strong drink:  
that ye might know that I am the Lord your God.  
(Deuteronomy 29:4-6)

It was the Father that kept me from the church or even reading the Bible. This is because He knew that He was going to teach me His doctrine and He did not want me to be confused with man's doctrine. For man's doctrine is far away from Him and His ways. Now, just because I knew no sin, doesn't mean that I did not sin. That is a chapter in the last book, *The Sin of the World*. Man refuses to listen to every word that proceedeth of the mouth of God.

Then once I read the Bible for the first time, I believed what I read, and I started to listen to the Father. That is when I realized that He never commanded us to celebrate birthdays, nor man-made holidays. I immediately quit celebrating or honoring these days for myself or anyone else. Regardless of how others felt about it. I also quit eating the unclean things at this time.

I did not complete high school either. I dropped out of school in the 10<sup>th</sup> grade and obtained my G.E.D. So, I can truly say that I only have a 9<sup>th</sup> grade education. Because of me wanting to be a truck driver since I was 4 years old, when I turned 21, I got my Commercial Drivers License, and have pretty much been driving since.

Now everybody should be able to understand what it means to hear that our Father will use the foolishness of this world. There are billions of people that are smarter than me. There is two things that I feel truly confident in. First and foremost, is our Father and all that He has taught me through the King James Version of the Bible. Second, is driving a semi, but I know that I couldn't do it without Him being my main source of knowing how to do what I do. Listen to what the scriptures tell us about Him using the foolishness.

For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power

of God. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. (1 Corinthians 1:18-31)

There are a lot of very smart people that have head and or even listened to their Bibles. But so many of them listen to their imagination and go chasing knowledge of our Father somewhere other than the King James Version of the Bible. As shown in previous books, the Bible is one thick cloud. Many chose to try to find the light by going around, below or above this cloud. The wise man thinks that he can

figure the Bible out. The wise man thinks that God the Father can be found somewhere other than the King James Version of the Bible. The wise refuse to humble themselves to become as a little child willing to learn. Now as to why the wise do as they do, I cannot answer, but I choose to stay in this cloud, continuing to listen and allowing our Father to teach me the rest.

As a child, I lived within a family of 7. I have 3 older brothers and one younger sister. All that I knew about sin was what man said what sin is. I never tried to see if what I was hearing lined up with the scriptures. I am going to give a couple of examples. Man teaches that it is the seventh commandment is thou shalt not commit adultery. Well, this does hold true as to one not cheating on his or her spouse as to man's law. But what if the one that cheats or commits adultery is being told to do so by our Father and those that have dominion over our bodies? As shown in previous books, if you cheat on your partner, you will be cheated on in your next life. But then we must listen to when God said that we are to have so many wives that our heart falls away from Him.

Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold. (Deuteronomy 17:17)

We can here God say that we can have many wives. In fact, in the Bible, there is not one place that states that we need to go to a preacher, pastor, priest, or judge of any sort to make a marriage legal. As shown in previous books, consensual sex makes a marriage in our Father's eyes. That is how we today have many wives and husbands. But what about committing adultery on our Father? Remember He is married to us.

Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: (Jerimiah 3:14)

For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. (Isaiah 54:5)

Now I know that there are some that don't believe in God the Father because they see no proof. Well, I am going to give you proof that you see every day. You and everybody you see and or talk to is proof. I see billboards all the time showing a picture of babies, stating that this is proof of God. Well, that baby grows up and is still made without hands. Now picture this, man cannot make a human body that has emotions and feelings. Man cannot duplicate the human body that requires blood to flow throughout the body and back to the heart to provide what the body needs at the precise moment that the body needs it. Man cannot create a human that all the, bones, nerves, blood vessels grow as time moves on. Man cannot create the body that requires oxygen that allows the body and brain to function. The human body is proof that can and is seen daily, yet some still refuse to believe.

Don't you get to know your spouse more and more once you are married? Well by not getting to know the Father, you are committing adultery on Him. I know many are thinking that He divorced us, but He only gave us a bill of divorcement and the divorce does not become final until the end of the world as shown in the first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. Later in this book, we are going to be showing how the Father is married unto us within the scriptures.

We all should know that we are to cleave onto one another so that they can become one. Why do not people realize that we are to cleave unto the Father?

Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God; him shalt thou serve, and to him shalt thou cleave, and swear by his name. (Deuteronomy 10:20)



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them. (Deuteronomy 30:20)

Now to bring up another so-called sin by man's definition that stems off of the marriage concept, we need to be thinking about how man tells us if a child is born out of wedlock, it is a bastard. Knowing this, one needs to ask what this is about.

But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. (Hebrews 12:8)

Note that this has nothing to say about being married. If your conscience is constantly telling you should do something and you refuse, you are refusing chastisement. Then you become a bastard and will be kicked out of the congregation of the Lord for the next 10 generations. That is ten lives that you will spend in outer darkness and there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. This means you will be on your own with no help from the Father.

A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the Lord. (Deuteronomy 23:2)

Now we gave these two examples so that we could show how man just refuses to listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. This also shows why David is constantly telling the world, in the books, that he is not writing another. I am in the flesh and do not have the patience that our Father has. I have been longing to go home for some time now. When I went out to get baptized by the Holy Ghost, I truly thought I was going out into the wilderness to

physically die. Then after that, I started telling people that the world was ending. It took about six months for our Father to convince me that the world was not ending at that time for all, but it did for David. The baptism of the Holy Ghose was when David laid down his carnal life and started to ascend in the spiritual realm of things as he began to live in the kingdom of God.

Now to show why David keeps telling the world, he is not writing another book. When I wrote the first book, I thought people would be as excited as I was for the way I just woke up on my 45<sup>th</sup> birthday, with this newfound understanding of the Bible. Then after a couple of years of listening to the Bible, day in and day out, I thought people would be really excited for the deeper understanding that I was sharing. Nobody was reading these books. Then in early June of 2019, the Father gave me the commandment to make my name known twice, and then proceeded to tell me to get the book done or I would have to start over from the beginning. Then right after this book was published, a fellow servant of God asked me name and I replied, David. She then said, oh, because I am supposed to say Jesus is here. I about fell out of the chair I was sitting in, for this happened at a casino, and I didn't even have my first copies of the book yet. I thought for sure this meant the days of being rejected was over. Then in October of 2019, the Father sent me on trip to Hawaii. I now had copies of the third book and thought that I was being sent there to pass some out. Much to my surprise, this is when I seen the spiritual flood that covers the earth today.

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved  
like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover  
the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants  
the thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

Yes, I seen this flood with my own two eyes explained in the fourth and fifth books. I just knew that I had to write another book. Being insecure about the name of the third book, I placed the third book inside the fourth book. Yes, I truly felt that the fourth book was

going to be the book that was going to end the rejection. Then there was complication with the publisher that I had been using so I had to find a different publishing company that took longer to publish. Either way, none of the books were being read yet. Then that book was published in December of 2020, and I thought it would take hold because of the name of it and for it showed how all the previous books talked about how the Father had me give a warning of the virus that took over the world.

At this time, I was ready to give up on writing for it just seemed this world didn't care. I had listened to the Bible so many times, that I was just ready to say let me be the only one that goes. I was pretty much begging the Father to just take my life and let it be. I was fine with being like Noah, Daniel, and Job only saving their own souls.

Then in the spring of 2022, He told me to write another book. It was in May when I truly got started on it and then an incident happened. I told you all in the last book, I passed out while driving the semi. The truck went into the medium of interstate 80 in Nevada. According to the highway patrolman, the truck flew over the west bound lanes and landed in the ditch. It didn't hit anything and I tole the paramedics when they arrived on the scene, that I did not want medical attention. I spent a couple of weeks wondering why I was still alive. Then after losing the job, I had with that company, and being depressed, I decided that I needed to take my life back.

Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.  
(John 10:17-18)

You see, since the third book had been written, I started letting my life go. I was smoking strong cigarettes and eating fast food three or four times a week. I was eating a lot of junk food such as cookies, donuts, etc. I had put on some pounds. I had a lot of congestion in my

chest and wasn't exercising. I had pretty much decided, why bother, I was ready to go. But because I truly live by every word that proceedeth out the mouth of God, I was not and still will not go see a doctor. I listen to the Father for all my health issues. Luke the great physician is my doctor in which He only does as the Father commands Him.

Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, greet you.  
(Colossians 4:14)

And Asa in the thirty and ninth year of his reign was diseased in his feet, until his disease was exceeding great: yet in his disease he sought not to the Lord, but to the physicians. (2 Chronicles 16:12)

Now I need to say now that I am not a doctor and under no circumstances do I give any medical advice. It is your decision as to what you want to do. Or better said, it is your decision as to who you trust. But I will not seek man's medical advice. So, I listened to my conscience and found some supplements and such that I could get over the counter, or order online. I was out of a truck for now, but I found a job that required some physical work. I changed the brand of cigarette and went to a menthol because after doing some research, I found that the menthol causes and or reduces congestion. Hopefully you have read the fourth book, so you know why I refuse to put the cigarettes down. I will not explain it again in this book. Other than showing just one of many verses that leads to my decision and is exactly what I was told by the Father.

For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.  
(Matthew 16:25)

I started taking a daily heart burn pill instead of eating ten to twelve acid reducers a day. I lost around sixty pounds in four months. And when I went to get recertified to drive again, the doctor told me

that my health issues looked perfect. Just saying, before the incident, my blood pressure was bordering being too high, for a truck driver without taking medication. It was in the high 130s over high 80s. At the DOT physical it was 110 over 70. The Father fixed my health issues, and it was done a lot quicker than any medical physician could or would do. Being a truck driver, we must take a DOT physical once every one or two years, so that is the only time I will see doctor.

Now I need to explain something else. Shortly after this incident happened, I realized that if I would not have been conscience when the paramedics arrived, they would have taken to the hospital. Then it was about three weeks after, I ordered a do not resuscitate bracelet and necklace. When I took the physical the doctor asked about the medical bracelet, so I told him and now it is noted on my physical exam that is noted on my drivers license. And I wear both all the time. So, if something like that was to ever happen again, the only thing they can do for me is pronounce me dead. My life is in the Father's hands and not man's.

Then a man-made holiday started approaching, and because the people I was staying with don't understand the Bible as I do, started to put up decorations. I immediately knew it was time for me to get back into the semi. After making a few calls and being told no a few times, the company that I am with now, called me. I will not mention the company, but we will be talking about the truck I am in, later. I will say that I am still moving as the lightning, going from the east to the west and back, just as the scriptures say that I will be when I am revealed. Then the night before I flew out to this company, I finished and sent in the manuscript to, At Midnight I will rise.

While this book was still in the final process of being published, I asked the Father how much longer. I know the only reason He gave me an answer to this is because He knows I am fed up with this world rejection me and what He has taught me, and I am fine with Him just letting me die now and letting the world deal with His wrath. I will allow the Bible to explain how I feel.

(According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day. And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompence unto them: Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway. (Romans 11:8-11)

I will only show this in Romans, and I encourage you to seek where else this is said within the scriptures.

The same day I asked this, He told me after *At Midnight I Will Rise* is published. So naturally, I thought okay this is when the rejection stops. I will not tell you how He told me, but I will say He slowly explained it all day long. And sure enough, right after it was published, He started to put it on my conscience to write another. Yes, I fought with Him tooth and nail on writing another. It took Him about three months to finally explain to me why I need to write another.

Yes, things are starting to come to light as to the rejection about to end and by the time this book is published, there will be many reading the others. This chapter itself, is one of the reasons I am writing another. He told me that I must tell show you all, why.

This is David's flesh wrestling against the spirit within him. The flesh wants to quit writing for it just doesn't make much sense to continue writing if nobody is reading. So that you all can know that we are basing this out of the Bible, we are going to show some scriptures showing what we are going through.

For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. (Galatians 5:17)

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

the darkness of this world, against In spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. (Ephesians 6:12-13)

Yes, later in the book, we will be showing how I have truly put on the whole armour of God and will be revealing how all can do the same. This does not mean that all will. In fact, we are told that there will be more of the desolate than there will be that have a husbandman. The husband being the Father. We will also be talking about our husband from above in a later chapter. I am doing it this way so that I do not repeat a major topic in the first few chapters.

For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband. (Galatians 4:27)

Just in case you're wondering what desolate means, let us look on e-sword, an online Bible concordance.

H816 'âsham 'âshêm aw-sham', aw-shame' A primitive root; to be guilty; by implication to be punished or perish: - X certainly, be (-come, made) desolate, destroy, X greatly, be (-come, found, hold) guilty, offend (acknowledge offence), trespassive

Yes, that means there will be more that will be guilty than the not guilty. That is more that will not be forgiven of their sin than those that will be sinless. Then we need to listen to what our Father is saying about the desolate.

Evil shall slay the wicked: and they that hate the righteous shall be desolate. The Lord redeemeth the

DAVID JENKINS

soul of his servants: and none of them that trust in him shall be desolate. (Psalm 34:21-22)

Yes, many will parish for they have no trust in our Father. Right now, we need to focus on how the flesh part of David has been wrestling with the spirit that is within him and that is why he has been trying to quit writing these books for some time now. Hoping that he has finished doing what he needs to do before going home.

Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:7-9)

As I have shown you all in previous books, we are in schooling, and it is a learning process. And if I am in the flesh, I will not be perfect nor will anyone else. Now that we have shown these two verses, we are going to break them down so that we can hear that many just do not listen to what is being said. We already have shown how Jesus is being made perfect, so let us listen to what our Father tells us about the flesh of person.

And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the Lord: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung. (Zephaniah 1:17)

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: (Romans 3:10)



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

We already heard how the flesh wars against the spirit. Remember in the last book, we showed you all how each of us has been sentenced to death?

The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of hell gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow. (Psalm 116:3)

Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah28:15-18)

This is why we are told that we walk through the valley of death.

Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. (Psalm 23:4)

Death and hell are the same place, that place being here on this earth. We all have been sentenced to death and we all have been cast into hell. We will be talking about the stars that came here with Satan when he was cast out of heaven, and what happened to them

later in the book. I want to focus on those that have made a covenant with death and agreement with hell. These are the people that have come to terms with dying and not being concerned with being with our Father when their live ends. They do not see nor feel the spiritual fire that they walk through daily. They feel as if they could live this life with no regrets. I think the scripture so a better job of explaining.

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death. (Proverbs 14:12)

But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death. (Proverbs 8:36)

It is hating the ways of perfection. Now without getting way off topic, I want to show just a few verses that shows that we are in hell definitively.

And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 10:28)

And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.(1 Corinthians 13:3)

The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath. (Proverbs 15:24)

And there was a voice from the firmament that was over their heads, when they stood, and had let down their wings. And above the firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone: and upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness as the appearance of a man above upon it. And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from

the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. (Ezekiel 1:25-27)

Shall I cause it to return into his sheath? I will judge thee in the place where thou wast created, in the land of thy nativity. And I will pour out mine indignation upon thee, I will blow against thee in the fire of my wrath, and deliver thee into the hand of brutish men, and skilful to destroy. Thou shalt be for fuel to the fire; thy blood shall be in the midst of the land; thou shalt be no more remembered: for I the Lord have spoken it. (Ezekiel 21:30-32)

If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. (Psalm 139:8)

These are the words of Jesus in the first verse, allow the spirit of Christ within you to hear what this is saying. How can our Father destroy your body in hell if you aren't in hell now? Paul: wrote the book of 1 Corinthians, so how can he give his body to be burned if he wasn't in hell when he wrote it. Then in Proverbs, how can we depart from hell beneath, if we aren't there now? This in Ezekiel is Ezekiel being shown how the fire is within us. And again in Ezekiel, notice how some are fuel for the fire. How can one ascend into heaven and or make their bed in hell if we are not in hell already? We will be doing a chapter on the last one, for I am going to reveal this secret as to how we can ascend up into heaven, and or make our bed in hell, later in the book. I chose these verses intentionally. Because it leads us into me fearing my Father.

But before we talk about having a fear of our Father, I want to bring something else up that I haven't shown in the books before. We already noted how the fire is inside of us as Ezekiel was shown in the

vision. But now I want to reflect as to when the earth was first formed, or started to come into formation.

### In Earth's Beginning

At its beginning, Earth was unrecognizable from its modern form. At first, it was extremely hot, to the point that the planet likely consisted almost entirely of molten magma. Over the course of a few hundred million years, the planet began to cool and oceans of liquid water formed. Jun 2, 2022 Formation of Earth - National Geographic Society National Geographic Society <https://www.nationalgeographic.org> › article › formation...

We should be realizing the earth is where Satan and the starts were cast to before any of this began. As you can see now, it was nothing molten magma. This only further proves that the earth is hell. People can't grasp this as being hell because they cannot phantom the love that our Father has for us. Remember how man is formed from the dust. Well now you can also see that this dirt originated as molten magma. Now you feel the burn anytime you get mad, sad, bitter, angry, or any kind of discomfort. But is a tolerable burn, and with time, the burn weakens. And all of this happens so that you will turn back to our Father as He tells us.

Thou turnest man to destruction; and sayest, Return,  
ye children of men. (Psalm 90:3)

Remember reading that or hearing that it was heard that he feared? Let us listen to a couple times that we are told that the fear of God is a must, other than what we already showed.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom:  
and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.  
(Proverbs 9:10)

Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear  
God, and keep his commandments: for this is the  
whole duty of man. (Ecclesiastes 12:13)

This fear is not a fear that makes me think that our Father is going to come down and whip my butt or beat me up beyond recognition. It is a fear that can guide me through this valley of death. Or keep the flames at a very mild temperature so that I can easily endure them. This fear is what has driven me to want to get to know Him and what life is all about. And most importantly, this fear keeps me diligently seeking Him and His truth through the King James Version of the Bible so that I can become part of that perfection with Him. Why? Because this life here is far from perfect and I am sick of it. That is why I have the sentence of death within myself.

For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of  
our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were  
pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that  
we despaired even of life: But we had the sentence  
of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in  
ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: (2  
Corinthians 1:8-9)

Now let us just think about how I have been learning obedience. Yes, I have told you all in previous books, that I am told when there is a traffic jam coming. I have explained this in previous books so I will not go over all the details. But I am usually told where to stop and take a break. For instance, today as I was coming up to the shipper, I was thinking I could load this load today for the place I am picking this load up at, loads until 6 pm. As I was coming up, certain things happened in a way that I told the Father that I think you telling me

that I will not be loading today. I arrived at the shipper at 3:45 pm, but there was nobody around. I called them and got a voice prompt telling me that they now close a 4 pm.

Let us think about that for a minute. I could have got totally ticked off that they had changed their hours. I could have thrown a fit, I could have totally just got bent out of shape, emotionally. Which is a spiritual fire, but because I was told before I got here, that I would not get loaded today, I thought within myself, no biggie, I will just get started on the book. The flame was kept at a low temperature that I could bear. Yes, since the fifth book got published our Father has been putting it on my conscience to write another.

Now I have told you all in previous books, and have told people in person of how this obedience has been coming about. When it first started, I use to feel as if it wasn't fair for other drivers. I thought it would be nice if all people could see and hear what I was seeing and hearing. Then one night as I was talking to my mom. When she was alive as my mom and not the reincarnated granddaughter. I had seen something telling me that there was a traffic jam coming up within the next five miles. And I told my mom that this was going to happen. Sure enough, within just a couple of minutes, traffic came to a stop. I told my mom that this isn't fair and then I asked her why God doesn't teach others this. She replied because you are the only one that is supposed to learn.

For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. (Luke 10:24)

I did not understand at that time, but as shown in previous books and again in this one, everybody is a servant and or a vessel of God. And I know that God is spirit, I was being told this by our Father. Just as He told me to make my name known in the beginning of June of 2019. Just a couple months before the third book was written and published.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

I will say this though, if you do not believe that everybody on the planet is a servant and or vessel of God, regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. Regardless of what they have done, are doing, or will do, you will never hear the voice of our Father, nor see His shape. If you do not believe that everybody is part of the One Son of God. This is what is being said here.

And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. (John 5:37)

Which also means that you do not believe in the name of Jesus Christ, if you cannot see how everybody is part of the one Son of God. This was truly explained in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. Then if you haven't heard Moses and the prophets, you will never be persuaded that I have risen from the dead.

And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:31)

I have been trying to tell you all in all of the books, that the Bible is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today and not just a book about the past.

I want to show one more section of the Bible that is showing you all that our Father has said that He was going to be making me into the first born.

Then thou spakest in vision to thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him.

And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my covenant shall stand fast with him. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. If his children forsake my law, and walk not in my judgments; If they break my statutes, and keep not my commandments; Then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless my lovingkindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips. Once have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David. (Psalm 89:19-35)

I will not break down all these verses, however I have shown you all in previous books that this is talking about me right here. I am no different than any other, I am no better than anyone else, nor have I done anything to deserve Him choosing me.

For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. (Romans 9:15)

But He has and there is nothing anyone can do to change that. And I will forever more be in debt to Him for doing what He has done and doing with me. I will say this though, after the fifth book was published, I hired a company to build me another website. "davidofpsalm89.com". The Father is the one that chose the name



and not David. I told the company that I wanted the body to be sky blue and the frame or outside of it to be midnight blue. I wanted a spot to make post, and wanted to be able to add videos. This site was and is intended to promote *At Midnight I will Rise* and the other four books. When they finished it, I was very surprised to see the moving clouds on the home page. I never told them to do so. They just did it, and yes, that is just another witness as to who I am. Now the entire world can and will be able to see me in the clouds. And yes, all of the books can be downloaded for free if anyone wants but cannot afford it or chooses not to pay for it.

Which leads us to how I am becoming the author of our eternal salvation. This is the 6<sup>th</sup> book in which our Father has had me write. The Jesus that many believe in, did not write any of the books in the Bible. In fact, there is no evidence to show that Jesus wrote any books. But now the only time anyone has told you that he is Jesus, has written six books giving the world an understanding of our Father and what He is doing. And most importantly why He is doing what He is doing.

And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. (1 John 5:20)

Now I have talked with people over the years that tell me that they do not need to understand. Well let us allow the scriptures to tell us the truth.

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children. (Hosea 4:6)

Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not: Fear ye not me? saith the Lord: will ye not tremble at my presence, which

have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it? (Jeremiah 5:21-22)

When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, and set them on fire: for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will shew them no favour. (Isaiah 27:11)

Were it not that I feared the wrath of the enemy, lest their adversaries should behave themselves strangely, and lest they should say, Our hand is high, and the Lord hath not done all this. For they are a nation void of counsel, neither is there any understanding in them. O that they were wise, that they understood this, that they would consider their latter end! How should one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight, except their Rock had sold them, and the Lord had shut them up? (Deuteronomy 32:27-30)

The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: give me understanding, and I shall live. (Psalm 119:144)

The man that wandereth out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead. (Proverbs 21:16)

On this last one, there is a chapter in the last book, *At Midnight I Will Rise*, called *The Walking Dead*. This showed how this world is walking dead. It also showed how the dead in Christ will Rise, well not if you don't understand. Now I want to show one more spot that talks about all that do not know God the Father.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day. (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10)

Can you hear and see what is going to happen to all that do not know our Father. Can you hear what will happen to all those that do not seek Jesus in the Old Testament and obey. That is the gospel of Jesus Christ.

And I do this for no reward nor glory of myself. Any reward that we get while on this earth, will perish. Any reward from above, is eternal. And nothing from here is going with me.

For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. (1 Timothy 6:7)

I strongly suggest that you do your own google search to find out how many have come before me, claiming to be me. Yes, there has been many just as the scriptures tell us. On the Wikipedia search that I have looked at, if my count is right, there have been at least 45 documented people that have claimed to be Christ. And I don't claim it, I know who I am, and I am here to glorify my Father and His works.

Which leads us into the rest of this chapter. Some of these false Christ that have come before me claiming to be me, have claimed to be the reincarnated Christ. Or be the second coming of Christ. Which shows that these people did not know the scriptures at all. Nor did they know our Father. It is an incarnation in which is going on. As I stated, I walked in darkness as well as everyone else. I too,

was among the walking dead, until I willingly laid down my life back on March 8<sup>th</sup> of 2016. That is how the Father is making me into the first born.

So, with that in mind, let me remind everyone that God is working a works that no man can believe.

Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you.  
(Habakkuk 1:5)

Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.  
(Acts 13:41)

Once again, this just shows how people refuse to listen to our Father and only our Father. Now I know some of you are thinking that this wasn't written by our Father, but if we listen to everything in the King James Version of the Bible, we can know that it is our Father saying what is being said. Let us listen to some scriptures that plainly tell us that I am not returning, but I am coming. But we must listen to different sections of the Bible to be able to hear what we are being told. Yes, I am sharing a little of how I can hear things that those that came before me, could not hear.

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

Let us think about these two verses for a minute. We can hear that all scripture is given by inspiration of God. It is for doctrine, reproof, correction, and instructions in righteousness. It does not say to take

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

away from it, add to, or change it in any way. In fact, it actually tells us not to do these things in other sections of the Bible.

Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper withersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:7)

Also I have made a decree, that whosoever shall alter this word, let timber be pulled down from his house, and being set up, let him be hanged thereon; and let his house be made a dunghill for this. And the God that hath caused his name to dwell there destroy all kings and people, that shall put to their hand to alter and to destroy this house of God which is at Jerusalem. I Darius have made a decree; let it be done with speed. (Ezra 6:11-12)

Every word of God is pure: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar. (Proverbs 30:5-6)

For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life,

and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. (Revelation 22:18-19)

It is plainly saying through this Bible, and this Bible only, will you find your instructions of righteousness. I stand firm on this statement for as shown in previous books, the King James Version of the Bible is what our Father led me to when He first called me to the Bible. The King James Version of the Bible was published in 1611, and He called me to the Bible in 2011. Exactly 400 years after the King James Version of the Bible was published. There are 400 years between the Old Testament and New Testament. And because of the power of our Father, there is a reason that the King James Version of the Bible is the most popular version.

Any Bible that was written and published after the King James Version is a book that Satan, or man has gotten his hands on to make it say things that people want to hear instead of the truth. As shown in the last three books, man or the flesh is Satan or the serpent that is more subtle than any creature. Remember how we are told that God is not the author of confusion?

For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace,  
as in all churches of the saints. (1 Corinthians 14:33)

Here is the way I think about this. Let us say that there are 100 people in a room when something tragic happens. Right after the incident happens, the authorities start asking questions. The few people that were right next to this event. They tell what they saw, and by the time that the people that were farthest away, tell how it happened a little different. A little later in the day or the next day, you can ask the same people the same questions, more than likely, the story is going to change a bit. Then as time goes on, even though the same people are asked the same questions, the story is not anything like what truly happened. It is the same thing with the King James Version of the Bible. Man, or Satan thinks that the original needs to be modified to make it better. There is no better than perfect, period.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Before moving on, we need to realize that when we read or listen to the Bible, we are hearing conversations that are being held in heaven.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

This is telling us that if we want to hear the word of God, we need to be diligently seeking our Father through His word. This is every word that starts with, In the beginning, in the first chapter of Genesis. Every word that has been written after that, all the way the word Amen, in the last book of Revelation. This is how we live by not bread alone, but every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:3)

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:1-4)

When man ventures away from the King James Version of the Bible, man becomes confused and cannot find the one that is true. Now let us listen to another section of the Bible that allows us to know

that the people in which wrote the scriptures were only writing what they were being told to write and not what they witnessed.

We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:19-21)

Now listen to how we are told that no prophecy came of any private interpretation. Then listen to how this prophecy did not come by the will of man. Then listen to how these men spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. These men did not write of what they were witnessing, they were writing what our Father was telling them to write. And because our Father is all knowing, He made it sound as if it is past tense to us. To Him it is past tense, but to us, it is not. He knows what it will be like in a thousand years from now, but yet we do not know what tomorrow will bring.

Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. (James 4:13-15)

Then we need to realize that the scriptures were written for our learning. This means all the scriptures and not just bits and pieces.



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15:4)

Now I am going to give a couple examples of things we can hear that lets us know that the scripture were not written by people that witnessed the events. Let us listen to how things are said they happened before they happened in the scriptures.

The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said. (Matthew 26:24-25)

Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus; Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. (Matthew 10:3-4)

And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canaanite, And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house. (Mark 3:18-19)

In the first one, we hear, the Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master is it I? Why are we hearing Judas which betrayed him ask if it is I? This sounds as if Judas already betrayed him, but Judas didn't know. Then in the second and third ones, we can hear it talk about Judas, who also betrayed him. These last two are several chapters

before we are told of this betrayal taking place. How can this happen if these people are writing of things they witnessed as they happened?

I must confess, I thought I was only going to show one more verse, but something amongst these next verses caught my eye. When I first seen it, I had to set the laptop aside and ask our Father how I was going to explain this. Let us listen to a few verses in Hebrews.

For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation. (Hebrews 9:24-28)

I usually only talk about the 26<sup>th</sup> verse, which shows that Jesus has had to suffer since the foundation of the world but only appeared once in the end of the world. But the last verse caught my eye this time. So, I put down the laptop, asked the Father to show me how to explain this. For this states that Jesus will appear a second time unto those that seek him. At first glance, that would be two verses going against each other. One is saying the opposite of the other. Almost immediately, Bible verses started bouncing around in my mind. Some things in which I cannot confirm using the scriptures came to mind in which I will not post. It almost sounds as if the scriptures are saying Jesus only appeared once, but yet he will appear a second time? How could that be?

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

So, I decided to sleep on it asking our Father to let me know how to show the explanation of this while I sleep. As shown in previous books, our Father gives all of us our daily instructions as we sleep. And by the way, this is our daily bread that we are told to pray for in Matthew 6.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain: So that his life abhorreth bread, and his soul dainty meat. (Job 33:14-29)

When I awoke, I had several verses on my mind about those that think carnally. I started talking to our Father thinking that this won't really explain it. But yes, some are sealed to minister of carnal things even though to think carnally is enmity with God.

It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things. When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain. (Romans 15:27-28)

For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject

to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. (Romans 8:5-11)

So then, I decided to just meditate on it for a while. I turned on the television and started watching movies. I am stuck right now because the roads are closed due to winter conditions. So, it is not like I am in a big hurry. I have shown you all in previous books, no matter what I am doing, I am relating it to the scriptures somehow or another. That is all I think about. I am not stretching the truth, nor am I exaggerating.

In verse 24, we are told that Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands. And the human body is not made with hands. This too, is how he has suffered since the foundation of the world. He has and is in every person that has ever been in this world. This is also how he has tasted death for every man.

But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. (Hebrews 2:9)

Everybody that is born, must die as shown in the last book. Jesus, or the part of God himself that He breathed into man so that he became or becomes a living soul, never dies. But the flesh dies while Jesus is inside of us. The high priest are the priest above us that are reporting to our Father through Jesus shown in Ezekiel 40-46, and

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

explained in previous books. As shown in previous books, we are the beasts that are sacrificed, and that is why this states that the priest enter into the holy place with blood of others and not the blood of beast. Any time something happens that makes you feel anything but perfect, is them making some kind of spiritual sacrifice. In the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here, I explain how I almost sacrificed my son and my brother turned out to be the ram stuck in the bushes. Just the same as Abraham and his son.

Now we need to talk about how he only appeared once in the end of the world but for those that look for him, he will appear a second time. This is the part that took me a while to understand how to explain it. Through all the books, including this one, we have showed you all that we are reigning with Christ now. This has been a big mystery for centuries.

Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God which is given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God; Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints: To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.  
(Colossians 1:25-29)

When we search the scriptures diligently, and only the scriptures in the King James Version of the Bible, we can see him from the beginning. It is in the Old Testament that we start to see the body of Christ come together as explained in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. Remember how Jesus tells us to search the scriptures for they speak of me?

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.  
(John 5:39)

This is how we see him for the first time. But now because the world is ending, I have appeared, and only those that find him in the Old Testament will see me again. I started showing how the laws, rules, judgments, ordinances, testimonies, and commandments are for those above us that have dominion over our bodies. We also showed how everybody on earth has their own rules, laws, testimonies, judgments, ordinances, and commandments. That is what makes us all part of the One Son of God. That is what makes all of us Jesus.

And I guess I am going have to spell this out for some. Once means one time. It does not mean that Jesus is coming back. That would put him here twice. I say this because I was just talking with someone and told him about this verse. I quoted this verse to him, and he immediately told me that Jesus is coming back. Once means one time, not twice.

Now I am going to point something out that I did not completely comprehend until I was writing this book. What we are going to be talking about is how God Himself, tells us that He will glorify thy name of Jesus for the second time.

Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. (John 12:28)

Now we can understand how the Father has glorified the name of Jesus in the Old Testament. And when He reveals me to the world, He will glorify me once again, but only so that I can glorify Him and His marvelous works.

Now I am going to bring something up that I have told you all in previous books. I know our Father, I understand what He is doing, and I agree with what He is doing? Listen to when the Father ask if two can walk together and not agree.

Hear this word that the Lord hath spoken against you, O children of Israel, against the whole family which I brought up from the land of Egypt, saying, You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities. Can two walk together, except they be agreed? Will a lion roar in the forest, when he hath no prey? will a young lion cry out of his den, if he have taken nothing? Can a bird fall in a snare upon the earth, where no gin is for him? shall one take up a snare from the earth, and have taken nothing at all? Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? shall there be evil in a city, and the Lord hath not done it? Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants the prophets. (Amos 3:1-7)

God the Father is sitting inside of you. If you haven't taken the time to get to know Him, how can you agree with Him? How can you become one with the Father if you disagree with His ways? That is how and why the Father and I have become One.

I sacrificed my life back in 2016, when I went out into the wilderness to die. This was explained in the fourth book, *Jesus Is Here*. And specific details were given in the fifth book for those that wish to fact check me. I will give a quick showing of this here, but it will be covered more later in this book. This is where we need to listen to a little in Matthew.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the

earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

I had what man calls, a car accident on March 28<sup>th</sup>, Good Friday of 1986. I was in a coma for three days and three nights. Then almost 30 years later, I was baptized with the Holy Ghost. This is me walking out into the wilderness to die. This happened March 8<sup>th</sup> of 2016. 20 days shy of 30 years.

Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased. And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, (Luke 3:21-23)

Now we can be certain that this is not just a normal baptism if we just listen to this.

Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom. But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father. (Matthew 20:20-23)

This is just one example of how they above us, have dominion over our bodies. It was those above that caused me to have this so-called car accident. It was them above that called me to the Bible in 2011. It was those above us that led me to start listening to the word of God instead of reading it, so that I would hear the engrafted word.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

This engrafted word allowed me to believe that I was to walk out into the wilderness to die. After giving everything, I owned away, except the clothes on my back, including all money, to the poor and needy, David spent forty hours out in the wilderness thinking he was there to die. This was the process of David receiving the commandment talked about in Romans.

For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. (Romans 7:9-11)

Since then, David has been in school with our Father.

Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. (Galatians 3:24-25)

One on one, hardcore, hands-on training with our Father so that he could learn the scriptures and give the world and understanding in which has never been understood before.

And that is how I appear once in the end of the world to put away sin by the sacrifice of myself. I gave up everything to bring you all this knowledge in which our Father has taught me. Not for myself, but so that you all can see and hear how marvelous our Father is, and so that you can also truly feel the deep and compassionate love He has for all mankind. I do not go off my imagination thinking that I can find all I need to know about our Father by any other means than the King James Version of the Bible.

Now I am going to show you something that came to light, just a few days ago as I am listing to the Bible as I am driving.

Declaring the end from the beginning, and from  
ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying,  
My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:  
(Isaiah 46:10)

I have shown this in several to the books, as to explain that this is how the book of Revelation is how a lot of this began and not how it is going to end. Or even to explain how that if we do not understand the beginning of the Bible, then we will not understand the rest of it. This holds true for both, however there is more to it. Notice how our Father states from ancient times the things that are not yet done? He made it sound as if Jesus was here before now. There was a chapter in the last book, *The Woman that has had five husbands*. In this chapter, I explained how John 4, came to pass in real time.

There is the power of God the Father. The King James Version of the Bible was published 400 years before the days of Jesus would be about. I was amazed that He could talk about how we would need glasses or have failing eyes, how He gave us a way to clean our teeth, and how that my children would be raised by other men, These are all talked about in previous books. Yes, He knows who is reading these books and He knew would hundreds, if not thousands of years ago.

Well, we can be certain that He knew since the foundation of the world. And as shown in previous books, that was billions of years ago.

Now I have told you all in the previous books, and this one, I have listened the King James Version of the Bible well over 50 times. And today, as I am driving and listening again, I heard something for the first time. I will say that it is a good thing I had my seatbelt on for I would have jumped out of my seat. I was totally in shock and awe that I had never heard this before. I replayed the track on the cd player, or listened to this chapter, three times to make sure I was hearing what I heard. I will explain why I did not hear it unto today in the last chapter of this book. But for now, let us show you all what I heard.

And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. (Revelation 19:10)

This is the last book of the Bible, and yet, we are being told that the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. I will say this though, before today, when I get to this section of the Bible, I would always focus on being a fellow servant. But I did not hear how the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. Do you all realize what prophecy is? Prophecy is a prediction. Let us look at E-sword, and online Bible Concordance.

G4394 προφητεία prophēteia prof-ay-ti'-ah From G4396 ("prophecy"); prediction (scriptural or other): -prophecy, prophesying.

We are being told right here that it is a prediction that Jesus will be here. Not that he has been here. This is why our Father had me name the first book, Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening. But I can say with all certainty now, Jesus is here, and I am the vessel that our Father has chosen to fulfill his prophecy. Yes, it has taken my

years to get to the level of knowledge I am at now. But that is because I have truly been seeking His perfection and not man's. I don't quit, I get aggravated, disappointed, sad, and knocked down, but I always get back up and keep charging forward.

But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.  
(Hebrews 11:6)

I cannot imagine the reward I will receive once I am done with what I must do here. I know the peace, rest, and joy I feel within myself right now, is overwhelming. Just understanding this the way that I do is remarkable. I know who I am, and I know that I did not and do not deserve this, yet He chose me. I am forever grateful and more. And that is why I try to share this knowledge with the world. I want you to be able to understand our Father the way that I do.

Now to bring this chapter to an end. I am thinking that there are many that wonder why the Father is doing what He is doing and why He is doing exactly as He said He would. First and foremost, I wonder daily why He chose me to be the one the learn all of this and write about what He has taught me. I can ponder on this all day long, everyday but that would not do any good. I haven't and do not do anything different than others, rather than seeking Him in the King James Version of the Bible and nowhere else. I live life day by day. I have transgressed His law just as everyone has. I do not consider myself to be well educated. I drive a truck for a living, just trying to get by. Yes, I have a soft heart, but so do many others. The only thing that I can think of is when He first called me to the Bible back in 2011, I believed what I had read in the King James Version of the Bible. And I do love Him with all my heart, soul, and mind. But that is not all. I truly believe that He is perfect in everything that He has said, doing, and will do. And I believe this with all my heart, soul, and mind. That is why I immediately stopped celebrating birthdays and manmade holidays. I realized that He never told us to do this after reading the

bible for the first time. And I knew, and know that He is perfect so He would have commanded us to do so if He thought we needed to celebrate these days. I also immediately quit eating the unclean things.

As explained in previous books, there were three sections of the Old Testament that I believed were talking about me particularly. This naturally caused me to form a fear of God knowing that He could talk about me in this book that was written several hundred years ago. I immediately got very interested in learning how this could be.

Yes, I had to go through the laws of Moses before the baptism of the Holy Ghost so that I could learn all that I am learning. Not because I knew that this would do me well, but rather I had such a fear that my life would be useless if I didn't. This fear was and is very real today.

By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honour, and life. (Proverbs 22:4)

Let not thine heart envy sinners: but be thou in the fear of the Lord all the day long. (Proverbs 23:17)

Now as to why He would be doing what He is doing. In the beginning, our souls had decided that our ways were better than His. This is why Satan and a third of the stars, (us) were cast out of heaven to earth or hell. Let us listen to what our Father tells us about Lucifer and his ways.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the

heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.  
(Isaiah 14:12-14)

No, you do not remember this for this is what our Father has done.

There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall  
there be any remembrance of things that are to come  
with those that shall come after. (Ecclesiastes 1:11)

Here is where I ask you to reflect on your life and yours only. Have you been thinking that your ways are good enough? Have you been thinking that you do not need the Old Testament, and will still reap all the glories of our Father and His perfect house when you die and go to heaven? That is why you are here; it is not because He didn't want you there anymore. You made the choice to try to do things differently than His. This is truly when we realize that our Father loved us first just as we are told.

We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John 4:19)

He could have said, that is it, you all have transgressed my law and my perfect house, and you will never be with me again. But He decided to give us all another chance of life with Him. He breathed life into each of us. Or put a piece of Himself into all of us so that He could prove to Satan and everyone else, that love will always trump over evil. If we just adhere to His ways. And as long as we try to do things our own ways, they will eventually fail. His ways do not. He will not force His ways on anyone for His love gives you exactly what you want. If you want to continue living life your own way, that is what He will allow. If you want to enjoy all the glories of God and His house, you must listen and adhere to His ways. And know this, He will not allow you into His house if you refuse to get to know Him and His ways and agree with Him.

This is when we need to remember that He is always testing us to see who will be for Him or not. Who will adhere to His ways or not.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. (Deuteronomy 8:2)

Why would God be testing our hearts to see who will obey Him or not? To understand this, we must think about a couple of things. We all know that our Father is perfect, right? We can know that everything about Him is perfect. This also means that His house above is perfect. That is why Satan or Lucifer was cast out of heaven, here to earth. Satan thought his ways were better than God's. We just listened to that just a bit ago. Without going into details about the stars that came with him at this time, let us focus on being kicked out of our Father's perfect house.

First, let us listen to what the law is all about. We already showed that the law is our schoolmaster. But what else could it be about? Let us listen to what our Father tells us.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)

Now I could just simply say that if you're not willing to do this now, why would He think that you would suddenly do this when you get there. But beings how we are told that doing unto others as you would have others do unto you is the law and prophets, I am going to show you all how are Father has got me to think about all of this.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

What we are going to do is put you in our Father's shoes, hypothetically. This is not intended for you to think that this is real, it is just an example. I coming to your house, I am moving in, and I am going cause you to do things completely different than the way you're doing things now. Even though you have been getting along just fine, for several years and now I am going to make everything thing different. Would you allow me to come into your functioning house and disrupt it and destroy everything that you have accomplished?

Let us look at another example. Let us imaging that you and I are friends that help one another out. You just had beautiful white plush carpet put down throughout your house. I come over to help you work on your car. As I am working on it, I have a mishap and puncture your oil pan and get drenched with oil from head to toe. I decide I need to come in and take a restroom break. I come knocking on the door to tell you that I need a break as the oil is dripping off me. Are you going to let me in as I am? Not without changes happening. Such as me cleaning up and get the oil to stop dripping from me. And or you put something down so that oil does not get on your carpet.

In this last example, I used the illustration of this house being yours. And that maybe only I change something to get the oil to stop dripping and or you put something down to protect the floors. But we need to remember that our Father does not change.

For I am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed. (Malachi 3:6)

No, you would not in both examples. Why do you think that our Father is going to allow you into His perfectly functioning house. Or better yet, why do you think that He would release from this prison, or your sentence to death, if you haven't changed your mind on thinking that your ways are better than His? Understand why He is doing this now?



# OBEYING JESUS

This chapter might be out of place, but I am feeling our Father is telling me that I need to do a chapter on this topic. There are many that think that Jesus changed our perfect Father. Many think that if they get baptized by water, their automatically saved. There are many that think that Jesus came here a couple thousand years ago, died for our sins, even all future sins, and that their sins are automatically forgiven. There are many that we are living in the new covenant now. All of this is far from the truth. And we are going to be showing how the words of Jesus, tell us that we need all the Bible and not just the New Testament, or just bits and pieces of it. It is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today. You must stop thinking of the Bible as a book on history. And start realizing that it is about our lives today. Remember that all knowing Father, has the knowledge to know where you will be and what you will be doing in a year, five years, ten years, twenty years, etc. You do not know with all certainty.

The first thing we need to be listening to is how we are told that Jesus does not come here to destroy the law but to fulfill.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

How can anyone understand how Jesus comes to fulfill the law if they have no interest in finding out what the law is about? One of the first

things that I learned when this journey started for me back in 2011, was that the law can set you free. Let me elaborate. When we listen to everything of the Bible and not just bits and pieces, we can learn that the truth is thy law.

Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth. (Psalm 119:142)

Yes, thy law is the truth, so in retrospect, what we hear when we listen to the words of Jesus tell us that the truth shall set you free, is that the law shall set you free.

If you listen to the ways of man,, they will tell you that Jesus came here, died for your sins, and if you believe that, your free. No, you're not, nor will you be. You will continue in this life until the end of the world, you will be judged for all of your sins, and you will continue to be reincarnated and have to worry about dyeing in each life that you live. Remember there is another world coming after this one. You will not be released from prison, or your sentence of death as explained in the last book. At Midnight I Will Rise.

And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matthew 12:32)

We need to remember that the law is a shadow of things to come. If you aren't willing to take part in the law in any fashion now, you most definitely will not in the world to come.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

As you can and will come to understand in the previous books, we are the beast in which they above that have dominion over, that they sacrifice. But it is not a physical sacrifice, it is spiritual in which will cause havoc in your own personal life.

As for it being a shadow of things to come, we need to realize that those that become one with the Father, will have dominion over those that do not become one. That is the world to come. But only if you are willing to obey our Father. Trust Him for He knows what He is doing.

It is the law in which teaches us how to love others as we love ourselves. Now I am going to show something that is not said by the words of Jesus in this section, but he states it also.

Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. (Romans 13:10)

And after listening to the law so many times, I can honestly say that I never knew how to truly love everybody, as I do now. This love for others does not come at convenient times. It is all the time, and it is for anyone you see. The law teaches you how to put yourself into someone else's shoes, but from a spiritual perspective. And teaches you to consider how you would feel if you were that person and in their situation yourself. Then you treat them accordingly.

So now that we have shown that, I want to show where we can here that the truth can set you free.

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the

Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. (John 8:31-36)

Notice how we are being told if you continue in my words. This is so taken for granted that it almost makes me sick to my stomach. I see billboards all over the country telling people that Jesus sets you free. No, he don't, if you do not know him. I showed you all in the first chapter, that we get to know Jesus if we search for him in the scriptures.

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. (John 5:39-40)

This is the words of Jesus telling you specifically to search the scriptures. This is the only time that the words of Jesus tell us to search the scriptures. The scriptures that he is referring to is what allows us to find him in the Old Testament. This is what was what we started to show in the second book. Behold, A Greater Than Jonas Is Here. This starts to show how everybody is part of the one Son of God. Regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. Regardless of what they have done, doing, or will do. The scriptures teach that every person has their own set of rules, laws, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. We start to learn that this is how the world functions. That is what I meant in the first chapter, if you do not believe this, then you do not believe in and or understand the name of Jesus Christ. This is when we need to be reminded that we are to hear the engrafted word.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Have you ever heard of subliminal messages? That is what this engrafted word is. We are getting ready to learn that the words of Jesus constantly tell us to refer to Moses, the law, and the prophets. He does not directly say that we need to listen to all of Moses, the law, or the prophets, but he is constantly referring to them and shows that he knows what they are all about. The first time that we can hear this in in the fourth book of the New Testament.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. (Matthew 4:1-10)

We can hear Jesus refer to the scriptures three different times here. He does this by saying it is written. This is the fourth book of the New Testament, so what scriptures could he be talking about. Let us

look at what he is referring to each time he is tempted by Satan. Yes, In the third and fourth books, I show you all how this happened to me also. But they did not happen in the order that it happens in the bible. We are going to go through each time that Jesus was tempted, show where it is written, and then I will show you how those same things happened to me when I was on my 40 days fast back in 2016. If you're interested in learning more about my experience back then, I suggest that you read the fourth book. Jesus is here. I put the third book inside of the fourth, and there is a lot more detail in that one.

The first time he is tempted shown here, we can hear him say that man shall not live on bread alone. Let us listen to where this is written in the scriptures.

And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:3)

This happened to me on my last week that I was working for my brother in South Dakota. My brother and his wife went to a man-built church. They come back trying to tell me that a version of the bible other than the King James Version of the Bible states that Jesus made all food clean. We argued back and forth all day long. I wound up telling them that you cannot change what the Bible.

Then we can hear Jesus say thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah. (Deuteronomy 6:16)

This happened to me about two weeks after I went out in the wilderness to die. I was at my mom's in Macon, MO. The brother that is just a couple years older than me, told me, that he wanted me to check into a hospital, be put on meds and see if I still wanted to learn about God

the way that I did and do. He could not understand how I could sit all day long and listen to the Bible. I told him the same words. I told him that thou shall not tempt God. You see, my brother was looking for proof so he could believe what was happening to me. I didn't and don't need proof. I know what is happening within me. I am a little more use to it now, but back then I was so excited and eager to learn. Today, it is just normal for me to listen to the scriptures as I am driving.

Then the last thing we can hear Jesus say is that man shalt worship the Lord thy God and Him only. I am a little shady on this one, but I am almost certain that this too, happened in Macon with the brother that is only a couple years older than me. I remember once I got in the truck and the Father started showing me all of this, I remember thinking that they did not happen in the order that they happened in the scriptures. When I said thou shall not tempt God, that was before the fast started. I mean yes, I helped my mom out in Macon, but There was never an agreement of me saying that she could not pay me like there was when the Father sent me to South Dakota. For more details on this, I suggest reading the fourth book. I would say the third and fourth, but as explained in the fourth book, I put the third inside the fourth with a few modifications. But I assure you, I did tell my brother that thou shall worship God and Him only. The scriptures cannot be broken.

These are also described in the book of Luke. But in Luke, they are listed in a different sequence. Kind of like they didn't happen in sequence with me, but they all happened. Now I want to look at a few spots that we can hear people ask Jesus of certain things. Or we can hear Jesus say, it is written.

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? (Luke 10:25-26)

And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Matthew 21:13)

Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. (Matthew 26:31)

Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Luke 19:46)

But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. (John 15:25)

And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. (Luke 24:44)

Now we have shown a few times in which we can hear that it is written. What do you think you are being encouraged to do here? No, he do not come out and say that you need to go find where in the scriptures this is written, nor does he tell you where it is written specifically. But he does tell you that it is written. So, without saying it directly, he is telling you to search this out in the scriptures. This last one that we showed, tells us which is written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and the psalms. This one is telling you that you need to search and seek all the Old Testament. This is not saying, well I said it, so just believe that it is in the Old Testament.

Now I am going to show one verse stated by the words of Jesus. But I have some commentary I want to make on this for it directs



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

us in a different direction and has something to do with the ten commandments.

Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? (John 10:34-36)

We showed you all in the last chapter that God Himself, dwells in everybody, so yes, this makes us gods. This does not make us the Father, however He does dwell within each of us. This is how other can be your god. If you allow someone to keep you from seeking our Father within the scriptures, you are spiritually putting this person or persons in front of God. Which is breaking the very first commandment.

And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. (Exodus 20:1-3)

As explained in the last book, *At Midnight I Will Rise*, we all have several gods. The commandment is not to have any other gods before me. Anything you put your trust into can be a god. Now I want to start looking at the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two

commandments hang all the law and the prophets.  
(Matthew 22:36-40)

How can one love God with all of their heart, soul, and mind if they are not willing to try to understand who He is and what He is all about? So, yes Jesus is telling you to seek the Father. And as we have shown you all, the law is what teaches us to love our neighbor as ourselves. Then Jesus tell us that on these two commandments, hang all of the law. How are you going to hang all the law and prophets on these two commandments if you don't want anything to do with the law and the prophets?

Now we are going to show another area in which we can hear about these two commandments. But this time we are going to listen to what is said right before Jesus states these and then listen to how the scribe replied back to Jesus and then notice what Jesus tells him.

And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question. (Mark 12:28-34)

This time we can hear Jesus say, hear O Israel The Lord our God is one Lord. Then he goes to tell the two commandments. Then we can hear how the scribe replied, he stated that he was aware that there is but one God. then he goes on to say to love Him with all the heart and with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the strength. We are being told right here that we need an understanding of our Father. How can anyone get an understanding of our Father if they refuse to seek Him? Then we can hear Jesus state that this scribe is not far from the kingdom of God. Without saying it directly, Jesus is telling us that we at least need to have the same understanding as this scribe to be close to the kingdom of God.

Now that we have shown this, we need to listen to when we can hear Jesus say this is the law and prophets.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

This is the same thing; Jesus is telling us that we need to seek out the law and prophets so that we can learn how to do unto others and we would have others do unto us. Now I want to focus on a few times we can hear Jesus say things like for those that have the ears to hear.

For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 11:13-15)

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And

he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 13:1-9)

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 13:36-43)

We are going to pause here and give some commentary on what we just heard in these first three. How can anyone find out who Elias

is if they do not seek him out in the scriptures? Yes, he has already come for all of you that think you will see him before the end. I describe this in previous books, if you want to learn how the scriptures teach us how he has come already.

Then we hear Jesus give the parable about the Sower. And he speaks this in a parable so that those that do not want anything to do with our perfect Father and His perfect ways, will never understand how to plant this seed. Well, the last book, *At Midnight I Will Rise* gives some details as to how we plant these seeds. But then later in the chapter, he breaks down the parable for the disciples. But in both instances, he states who have ears to hear, let him hear.

Even after breaking the parable down, why would he say who have ears to hear, let him hear? There is going to be a chapter devoted to just this later in the book, but right now listen to how he states this is about the end of the world. And the devil is the one that has sowed them. But then listen to how he states that all those that do wicked and iniquity will first be gathered and cast into the furnace of fire. For all of those that think they are going to be raptured and taken first, you now can hear where you are going. Straight to the furnace of fire so that the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of our Father.

Now I want to focus on another time Jesus says if any man have ears to hear, let him hear. But this time we are going to show this in a different subject mater that will require me to explain a few things.

Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brasen vessels,

and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand: There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. (Mark 7:1-16)

First thing we need to explain is that this is not about food at all. This is targeted at how people do many things that make the word of God void. But because I know there is a lot of people that believe that this is about food, I am going to put that to an end. Back when I was on my 40 days of fasting at my brothers, they went to a man-made church and when they came back, they verbally attacked

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

me telling me that we could eat unclean things. This argument went on for several hours. After neither side would come to a conclusion, I went for a long walk to talk with the Father. When I go back from my walk, things had calmed down. As I awoke the next morning, the words that came out of my mouth were, “ I never declared the unclean things as food. I immediately had to look at this and now I am going to show you all the same thing.

I am going to show you the first four verses of Leviticus 11. Then I will make some commentary on that before showing you something in the fifth book of Moses.

And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is clovenfooted, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat. Nevertheless these shall ye not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the hoof: as the camel, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the coney, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the hare, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you. (Leviticus 11:1-7)

In the second verse, our Father tells us these are the beasts which ye shall eat. Then in the fourth verse, He tells us these ye shall not eat. Right there it is, He did not declare the unclean thing to be meat for us. He definitively tells us not to eat the unclean. Now I am going to show one more section, but this time, listen to how He words it.

Ye are the children of the Lord your God: ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead. For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing. These are the beasts which ye shall eat: the ox, the sheep, and the goat, The hart, and the roebuck, and the fallow deer, and the wild goat, and the pygarg, and the wild ox, and the chamois. And every beast that parteth the hoof, and cleaveth the cleft into two claws, and cheweth the cud among the beasts, that ye shall eat. Nevertheless these ye shall not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the cloven hoof; as the camel, and the hare, and the coney: for they chew the cud, but divide not the hoof; therefore they are unclean unto you. And the swine, because it divideth the hoof, yet cheweth not the cud, it is unclean unto you: ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor touch their dead carcase. (Deuteronomy 14:1-8)

Can you hear how He says that you are a holy people unto the Lord thy God? Then He goes on to explain what we shall and shall not eat. How can you be a holy people if you refuse to listen to what the Holy One commands of you?

Now if you do not believe in the Old Testament, then listen to what we are told in the New Testament.

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Corinthians 6:16-18)

Here in the New Testament, you are being told to come out from amongst those that are touching the unclean thing, and be ye separate. And then, and only then will God the Father receive you and will be a Father unto you and we will be His sons and daughters. But if you will not stop touching the unclean things and continue to be with all those that refuse to harken to our Father, you will not become His sons and daughter, and He will not be a Father unto you.

Now let us focus on what this is about. Many people say that someone is not right with God if they do certain things. If they don't dress in a certain way. If they don't wear their hair in a fashion that is not suitable to them. Well as shown in all of the books, everybody on the planet is a servant and or vessel of God. So, let me ask you this, how do you know God that dwells within them, is not causing them to be exactly who they are.

When we hear what goes into the mouth does not defile a man is correct but that is not talking about food. It is what comes out of a man's mouth in which defiles him, for what comes out of his mouth, comes from his heart. Let me explain, I smoke cigarettes, but this does not cause me to stop looking at the cross that everyone carries that is made without hands. I drink coffee as well, but this does not cause me to stop loving God with all of my heart, soul, mind, and strength.

Now let me show you why eating of the unclean things does cause you to not love God with all of your heart, soul, and mind. First and foremost, He said you shall not eat of the unclean things. If you do, why can't you trust Him? In the beginning of the Bible, God said if you eat of the forbidden fruit, you will be as Him and you will know good from evil. But do you truly know if the evil that someone does, is not being done by our Father now that you know that it is Him that dwells in everyone. You don't but if you think you do, then you are putting yourself on the same level as God the Father. You're not Him but He does dwell within you. He tell us not to judge, or condemn

others. Then He ask where is His honor? How can you honor our Father if you refuse to listen to what He has said or will say? Or if you believe some false god came here in the past and changed His perfect law?

A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name? (Malachi 1:6)

Now we are going to switch gears a little bit and listen to when the words of Jesus gives us direct rules to follow.

Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them:

for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:1-21)

First thing he mentions is to take heed and do not your alms before men. Alms are when you help someone out. This is financially a lot of times, but it can be by just helping with food, clothing, etc. Just so you can see, we will use E-sword, and online Bible concordance to look at the definition from the Greek point of view.

G1654 ἐλεημοσύνη eleēmosunē el-eh-ay-mos-oo'-nay  
From G1656; compassionateness, that is, (as exercised

towards the poor) beneficence, or (concretely) a benefaction: - alms (-deeds).

Do not let men see or even hear about your alms. Remember we have shown you all that man is Satan, or that Satan is inside of each of us. So, when you allow others to see or hear of your alms, you are seeking a reward from Satan. And because of this, you will not receive a reward from our Father. But if you do your alms in secret, the Father will reward you.

Then we are told that when we pray, don't be as the hypocrites for they pray in the synagogues and in the streets so that they may be seen by men. These people are anyone that prays so that others can hear their prayer. They do this because they want to be rewarded by man and or Satan instead of being rewarded by our Father. Then we are told to go into the closet and shut the door. Now let us listen to when we can hear what the door that we are to shut is.

Set a watch, O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips. (Psalm 141:3)

Without saying it directly, we are being told to shut our mouths when we pray. Remember the Father is sitting inside of you, so He does not need others to hear your prayer. This is where I need to comment of something that I hear a lot. I know that there are a lot of people that pray to Jesus. As shown in previous books, this is giving the glory to some other spirit other than our Father.

Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the Lord? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. (Isaiah 45:21)

We need to remember that our Father is a jealous God and He will not share His glory with another.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

They provoked him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they him to anger. They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not. Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee. And when the Lord saw it, he abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters. And he said, I will hide my face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith. They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation. (Deuteronomy 32:16-21)

The only way I can and will save anyone is by them reading these books and turning back to our Father for He is the only one that can save anyone, just as He has saved me.

Now I want to point something out those that pray before eating. No, this is not the words of Jesus, but it something that had caught my attention the first time I read the Bible.

When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the Lord thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. (Deuteronomy 8:10)

I have done my own searches on this for myself in the past. I am not saying that Father told me do so, so I will not show it on here. But the last time I searched this out, there had been something like 55,000 documented deaths due to choking while eating. Do you really think that none of these people prayed before they ate? We are told to eat and then give thanks.

Then the words of Jesus tells us not to do as the hypocrites do for when they fast, they disfigure their face and such, so that they can be seen by others. Remember Satan is in everybody, and when we do any or all of these works to be seen by others, we are seeking a reward by man and or Satan. That is why we are told that those that do these secretly, will be rewarded openly by our Father. And no, fasting is not depriving yourself of food. It is helping others and taking the burden off their shoulders for no reward. Remember, we have already been over that? This can be confirmed by listening to Isaiah 58.

Then we are told not to lay up treasures on earth where moth, rust and thieves can and will corrupt, but lay up your treasures in heaven where none of these can or will ever damage in any way. Yes, I am paraphrasing but that is how I hear it. If my treasures are up in heaven with our perfect Father, then they will remain perfect for all eternity and will be there when I get there.

Now we also need to be thinking about when Jesus tells us not to call any man on earth our Father.

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. (Matthew 23:8-10)

This makes me remember one of the trips I had taken to Israel. There was a gentleman that referring to someone as a rabbi. I asked why he was doing this, and his reply was to show respect for such, and then he said Jesus did. I had to show him this exact scripture, because if we are listening, not even Christ is to call anyone on the earth, master, nor Father. We all have but One Father and He is in Heaven. Now I am not calling anyone out, but there are some religious organizations out here that caller the priest, father. Why?

Now I want to focus on a few times that the words of Jesus directly tell us that you need to learn about Moses and the prophets.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words? (John 5:43-47)

Right there in the last couple of verses, Jesus is saying directly that you need to believe Moses, for he wrote of me. Remember how we showed you all how we find Jesus in the scriptures? Moses is the one that teaches that everybody has their own rules, laws, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. When we start to listen to all that Moses teaches, we start to hear how everybody is part of the one Son of God.

Now we are going to jump back to the book of Luke. In here we will hear the words of Jesus saying that we need to hear Moses and the prophets.

And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:31)

Now I am sure that there are a few of you that are asking how can we believe Moses, and hear the prophets? This is when we need to realize that just because a person is dead, they still speaketh. Remember the entire Bible is spiritual because God is a spirit.

By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. (Hebrews 11:4)

One of the first things that happened to me the first time I read the Bible was I truly felt like it was talking about my personal life. That is when I realized that the Bible is not a book of history, it is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives. As I told you all earlier, that is what really got me interested in seeking the wisdom of God the Father out. And also remember what we are told.

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:17)

Now we need to go back to the book of John but in we need to advance to the sixth book.

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. (John 6:43-47)

Yes, Jesus is saying that no man can come to him unless the Father with hath sent him, draw him. Yes, I am saying the same thing. But for now, let us thing about this for a minute. Why would the Father draw you to me if you think the Father is mean, cruel, vindictive, or you do not want anything to do with Him? Then it goes on to say that they shall be taught of God, and all that hath heard, and learned of the Father, cometh to me. Yes you must learn of our perfect Father.

I am going to tell you all how this happens, but mainly to help you understand how the Father does some of the things He is doing. Just recently, I was bringing a load in to Stevens Point, Wisconsin from the sate of Washington. As truck drivers that drive across the



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

county, most of run a 70/8 recap. That means we can only work 70 hours in 8 consecutive days. I was had used about 60 hours when I stopped at a truck stop. I was thinking that I would probably take a 34-hour reset so that I could run open logs the next week. If we take a 34-hour break anytime within these 70 hours, It resets our clock and then we can drive 11 hours each day until we reach our 70 hours again. If we do not take this break, we can only work the hours that drop off on the 8<sup>th</sup> day.

When I got to the truck stop that I intended to say at, there was no parking spaces open. So, I went on personal commute and moved to the truck stop across the street with the intentions of using my personal commute to come back the original truck stop I wanted to stay at for this break. After waking the next morning, I hit my personal commute on my electronic log and started moving back to the other truck stop. Then once my truck got up to five mile an hour, the log beeped at me telling me that I had not started my day. I immediately stopped and hit my personal commute again and then proceeded over the street. When I got parked, I noticed that my electronic log had logged me driving for something like three seconds. This in turn restarted the hours that I had already gained toward a 34-hour restart.

I knew right away, that was the Father telling me that He did not want me to take a 34-hour restart there. I thought about just sitting there a while and then going on into the customer. I was picking up my next load at the same facility on Monday, so maybe I could get it loaded earlier and then take a 34-hours restart. When I arrived at the customers on Sunday, the Father started telling me right away, that I wasn't getting my next load today. I thought no big deal because I wasn't crunched for time or anything.

I walked into the receiving office with two other drivers in front of me. The one at the window was having complications with getting the correct numbers to pick up his next load. After a few minutes, I got to the window and had the same problem, which wasn't a big concern for me because my load didn't pick up until the next day. After dropping my loaded trailer, I moved my tractor out on the dead-end street to

wait until Monday to get the information on my next load. I figured why not; I may well go for a walk.

When I parked the truck, I parked in an area by myself. Shortly after getting changed into some walking clothes, another bobtail truck parked right behind me. I thought within myself, so much for being parked alone. No big deal though, I then started on my walk. I don't know why, but soon after I started walking, I told myself that I am going to walk at least six miles today. No, I am not trying to save my life, but I am not dead or done yet so I must keep my health at an acceptable level since the incident in May of 2022. So, I exercise when the opportunity arises.

After returning back to my truck about an hour and a half later, the driver from the other truck that parked right behind me, got out and started talking to me. As I have told you all in the past, if I talk with anyone, it only takes me a couple minutes at max, before I start talking about our Father. As soon as I brought the Father up, he grabbed a phone and put a picture of this Jesus character on and asked me who I thought that was. I replied, a false man. He said that so many people believe in this man, but he is not real. I then knew he had some understanding of the truth. We wound up talking for about an hour. Yes, there were a few things that he still could not grasp, but that is why this all happened. I gave him the last book that we wrote, and gave him one of my business cards that promote the new website, "davidofpsalm89.com. Which he can download the rest of the books, if he wants to, for free. And he will be one of the dead in Christ to rise. But only if he reads the books to get an understanding of our Father. If he refuses to get an understanding as well as anyone else, he will perish. Now listen to how I do nothing on my own, and that I speak only what the Father has taught me.

Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. (John 5:19)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.  
(John 12:49-50)

And yes, today after picking up this load, the Father told me to tell you how He did this in this book. I do nothing on my own, and I only speak of what our Father has spoken to me.

Now I know that there are a lot of people that do not believe that there is any prophets alive today. Well, as shown in previous books, a prophet can just be a teacher of God's word. But most importantly, all the books in the Old Testament bring Moses and the prophets to you. You do not have to go and seek them out. We can hear this when we listen to this.

Then came the word of the Lord unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Go and tell the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, Will ye not receive instruction to hearken to my words? saith the Lord. The words of Jonadab the son of Rechab, that he commanded his sons not to drink wine, are performed; for unto this day they drink none, but obey their father's commandment: notwithstanding I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking; but ye hearkened not unto me. I have sent also unto you all my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them, saying, Return ye now every man from his evil way, and amend your doings, and go not after other gods to serve them, and ye shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers: but ye have not inclined your ear, nor hearkened unto me. Because the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab have performed the commandment

of their father, which he commanded them; but this people hath not hearkened unto me: Therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring upon Judah and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem all the evil that I have pronounced against them: because I have spoken unto them, but they have not heard; and I have called unto them, but they have not answered. (Jeremiah 35:12-17)

Stop looking at this as to say this is what God said to these people and start looking at it as He is saying the same thing to you today. Start placing yourself in the Bible. God does not respect anyone, nor does He favor anybody. God the Father does not change, so if He is talking this way then, He is saying the same thing now. You have heard of the King James Version of the Bible, right? Then God the Father has sent you Moses and the prophets. Did you hear how God said, Return ye now every man from his evil way. That every man includes you whether you are male or female. Now I feel that I need to place a complete chapter here, so I recommend that you listen to this as God the Father is talking to you personally.

And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will

he fetch thee: And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers. And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. And the Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day. And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to

possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the Lord swore unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them. (Deuteronomy 30:1-20)

Notice how it is up to you to choose life or death? Notice how life comes by turning back to the Father? Notice how the word is not in heaven, across the sea, or far away? It is within you if you allow the Father to show you, He will. Now I want to focus on something else that we are told in the same chapter, but a little earlier.

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27)

Here is where we talk about the seal that is in the middle of my forehead. Yes, there is a cross in the middle of my forehead. I did not put it there, it just showed up in the later part of 2014. This was over three years after the Father called me to the Bible. This was in my fourth year of going through the laws of Moses. Not because I thought I had to, but because I believed and still do believe all that I read and heard.

Then one night, the wife by man's definition of a marriage, and I were playing cards at my mom's. My wife looked at me and asked me if I knew there was a cross on my head. I replied no there isn't. She said, yes there is, I immediately got up and went to a mirror, and much to my surprise, there was and there is.

After years of thinking about when and how it could have gotten there, I remembered something that had happened about a month before this night of playing cards. My wife and I had just taken my daughter to Wayland, MO. To meet with here mother so that she could go back home. As we were driving back and going west on US 24, just east of Palmyra, MO. We both noticed this circle of amber looking lights. They only appeared for three or four seconds so we could not tell exactly what they were. We both, at the same time, asked what in the heck was that.

Now because I have read the book of Enoch, I know about portals. I have concluded that this was exactly what that was. It was about three- or four-months tops, after that, I woke up on my 45<sup>th</sup> birthday knowing what needed to be put in the book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. So, I strongly believe that is how and when the cross showed up on my forehead. I must make a little side note here, I often look in the mirror to make sure that it is still there. Sometimes the temper tantrums the I throw, make me wonder why our Father is still doing what He is doing with me. I mean, I know His love and patience for all of us is profound, but I don't know if I could put up with me the way He puts up with me.

But that is my seal that He has sealed me with. So, the books that I give you all are not perfect, but they show how I truly seek the Father, and the truth through the King James Version of the Bible. Starting with the first through this one, they teach you how to start thinking about all of this in a spiritual way instead of looking at the Bible as a book of the past. You will learn how the Father had me right about the Covid-19, in the very first book published in 2015. No, I did not name the illness itself, but He had me write about the illnesses that He said He would bring onto us, that are not written about in the Bible. Then in the third book, Jesus Christ in the flesh,

He had me tell everyone to humble themselves and to let your guard down because this is going to be a devastating time for the world. That book was published in September of 2019, then it was announced in November of 2019, that man was fighting an unknown virus. Then He also had me introduce the spiritual flood that is called Egypt, that covers the earth today. I also seen this flood, just before the covid-19 ravaged the world.

All these books give you all a spiritual understanding of the Father, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. And as we showed you all in the first chapter, anyone without understanding, will parish.

For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; (Colossians 1:9-10)

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. (Romans 8:1-5)



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Now because I am appearing at the end of the world, you need to read the books that our Father has had me write. Yes, you could try to undergo all the schooling that I have endured over the last 12 years of my life, and learn the same way that I did. But you don't have time. That is the entire reason that He has put me through this schooling. It is so that the true believers can get an understanding of Him from a Spiritual perspective. This is when we listen to when we are told that no one come to the Father but by me.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.  
(John 14:6)

I almost feel ridiculous for putting this in here because if you are reading this, you are reading the books. But I am feeling that our Father is telling me I must put this in here. I am the author of our salvation. That is why we are told that no man cometh unto the Father, but my me.

And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;  
(Hebrews 5:9)

Yes, this book will give some understanding of our Father and what He is doing. But this goes deeper then that. This is the 6<sup>th</sup> book that our Father has had me write, so yes, if you have read all of them to where you are at now, you are now eating my flesh and drinking my blood, in a Spiritual realm.

Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. (John 6:53)

I have shown you all in previous books, about making fringes. God wants each person to make them their selves. Have you ever

heard the expression, or used the expression, I did this with my own sweat and blood. It means that you worked your butt off getting that done, right? Well, that is what I have done with these books. The Father called me to the Bible back in 2011, and ever since then, I have been doing my best to live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. But, in March of 2016, I went out into the wilderness to die. As explained the previous books, it was a spiritual death and not physical.

Then I started my hard core, one on one, hands on training with the Father. Since then, I have devoted every minute of my life to learn all that I have learned, and have come to understand the Father and what He is doing and why He is doing what He is doing. I have poured out my soul. And I bring this understanding to you all in these books. I did this with my own sweat and blood. So, from a Spiritual perspective, you are eating my flesh, and drinking my blood by reading all the books that the Father has had me write. And if you have read them all, you are becoming one with us.

Now to bring this chapter to a close, we need to be listening to how the scriptures describe a person that does not have the doctrine of Christ.

The elder unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth; For the truth's sake, which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever. Grace be with you, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love. I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father. And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the

beginning, ye should walk in it. For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist. Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward. Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son. If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds. Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full. The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.  
(2 John 1:1-13)

Now that we have done this chapter, you should be aware that the word of Jesus at no time, tell you that you do not need the Old Testament. In fact, we have shown that if you do not seek our Father with all of your heart, soul, and mind, you will not find Jesus in the scriptures. Yes, this this makes all those without this doctrine, an antichrist. Then we need to recall that many can represent one man, or one man can represent many in the Bible. Which means the antichrist has been here and not going to be showing up. He is already here.

The doctrine of Christ leads you back to the Old Testament and if anyone tells you differently, do not let that person into your house. Your house is you, so do not let this person convince you differently if you are starting to understand that you need all of the Bible and not just bits and pieces. If someone tells you that God of the Old Testament is mean, cruel, vindictive, or of any nature than love, rebuke them, and be ready to give an answer of love towards them showing how merciful our Father of the Old Testament is.

In the fourth book, Jesus is here, there is a chapter called Building your house on the Rock. I want to give a quick showing of some of the things in your house and where they are. I am going to show you where your table is, where your alter is, and your door to your closet is. But first let us listen to the parable of Jesus and building our house on the Rock.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. (Matthew 7:22-27)

Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. (2 Corinthians 3:3)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars; (Jeremiah 17:1)

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. (Romans 12:1)

Set a watch, O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips. (Psalm 141:3).

Now we need to be realizing where this Rock that we are to be building our house on.

He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. (Psalm 89:26)

To shew that the Lord is upright: he is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in him. (Psalm 92:15)

But the Lord is my defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge. (Psalm 94:22)

How many have actually built their house on the Rock of the old testament just as Jesus told or is telling you to do? How many of these houses will stand in the end? It is not to late though, if you are still alive, you are able to repent and turn back to the Father and He will help you build your house.

Now one more thing before closing this chapter. We know that we are to go back to the Old Testament with the teaching of Jesus and or myself. But I want to show you how you are serving a different god if you refuse to turn back to God the Father of the Old Testament.

-And as for thee, if thou wilt walk before me, as David thy father walked, and do according to all that I have commanded thee, and shalt observe my statutes and my judgments; Then will I stablish the throne of thy kingdom, according as I have covenanted with David thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man to be ruler in Israel. But if ye turn away, and forsake my statutes and my commandments, which I have set before you, and shall go and serve other gods, and worship them; (2 Chronicles 7:17-19)

You can hear the Father say that if we will do as David thy father, there shall not be a man to fail to be ruler in Israel. But if you turn away, and forsake His statutes and commandments which He has set before you, “King James Version” of the Bible, you shall serve other gods. That almost sounds separate without showing more verses but, remember if God the Father says it to one, then He is saying to us all. We all are equal in His eyes. We have all transgressed His law.

# THE WORD BECAME FLESH

This chapter originally was going to be about Satan, the beast, and the mark of the beast. But as I got going through this chapter, the Father said this is going to be more on how the word became flesh. Which in turn, I am glad because I am trying not to repeat things that have been shown in other books. We need to be realizing that our Father has been telling us all along that He declare the end from the beginning.

Declaring the end from the beginning, and from  
ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying,  
My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:  
(Isaiah 46:10)

We are being told here that if we do not understand the beginning of the Bible, then we will not understand the end of it either. And I will say that if it were not for the Father teaching me one on one, hardcore, hands-on training, I would not understand it at all. I would be like many that think that the bible is only about people of the past and does not really relate to our lives today.

First thing we need to be thinking about is how when we read or listen to the King James Version of the Bible, we are hearing conversations in heaven.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence  
also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:  
(Philippians 3:20)

Now I showed you all in the last chapter, how the scriptures were inspired by God, and that they were written for our learning. We cannot find Jesus for the first time if we do not search him out in the Old Testament. But at the same time, we need to be thinking of ourselves being in a level of heaven when we listen to the scriptures in the King James Version of the Bible. Try to picture these images in your mind as you read from here on out. It is almost as if you are in the heavens looking at what is being talked about.

This is when we realize that Satan and the stars were cast to hell in the beginning. We must listen to some of the book of Revelation to understand this.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world:



he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:1-17)

As shown in previous books, this woman, is our mother. Not focusing on that at this moment but we need to realize what is being said when the woman brought forth a man child that was to rule all the nations with a rod of iron. This happened somewhere other than where we are today. When one first reads this, they can easily think that this only happens at the end, but when we listen closely, how

many times do you think Satan, or the serpent was cast to earth? It is not like he was cast to earth, then brought back to heaven, and then cast to earth again. Now this man child was brought forth, it was caught up to God. This is how this all began.

Then we can hear them say in heaven, now has come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. This is when Satan and the stars were cast out of heaven. The woman was given two wings so that she might fly into the wilderness. Remember, she is flying in the wilderness of the heavens. And she wound up here on earth. This earth is only one tiny speck of all that is in the heavens. That is why we can hear them say woe to the inhabitants of the earth.

Now I am going to state something that is not confirmed by our Father, but I keep thinking that this water that the serpent cast out of his mouth is the flood of Noah. Yes, I know that the scriptures tell us that God made it rain for 40 days and 40 nights. But when we listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God, we know that God creates evil also.

That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things. (Isaiah 45:6-7)

And then when we listen to this.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. (Romans 13:1)

When we listen to everything, I wonder if this is the flood of Noah. Anyway, back to the topic at hand. Remember how this man child was to rule all nations with a rod of iron? This is when we need

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

listen to the word of the spirit of Jesus inside of you say that he is the way, the truth, and the life.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.  
(John 14:6)

This one verse has a lot of different meanings to it in which could take us way of topic, but the only thing on want to focus on right now is how he says he is the life. This is the life that our Father breathed into man, so the man became a living soul. Let us listen to this.

And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis2:7)

Now to understand this we need to listen to when God the Father told the serpent on thy belly shalt thou go.

And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed

and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. (Genesis 3:9-15)

I posted a few extra verses here because it should still be fresh in your minds as to how they rejoiced in heaven for those that accused their brethren night and day were no longer there. Did you notice that Adam blamed the woman that God gave him? As if to say it is your fault God, that I transgressed your law because you gave me the woman that gave the fruit. Then Eve blamed that serpent for her transgression. Why did they rejoice in heaven? It was because the accusers of the brethren were no longer there.

Now I want to focus on how one man can be as many people, or many people can be as one man in the scriptures.

Then all the children of Israel went out, and the congregation was gathered together as one man, from Dan even to Beersheba, with the land of Gilead, unto the Lord in Mizpeh. (Judges 20:1)

And all the people arose as one man, saying, We will not any of us go to his tent, neither will we any of us turn into his house. (Judges 20:8)

And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehemiah 8:1)

Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all. (Colossians 3:11)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. (Galatians 3:28)

This is just a few of the verses that we can hear when we listen to everything. We can clearly hear that many can be as one. Then we need to listen to how we all die in Adam.

But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. (1Corinthians 15:20-22)

Now we need to reflect to when we heard that a third of the stars were cast to earth or hell with Satan.

And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. (Revelation 12:4)

We just heard a bit ago that the serpent or Satan was bound to thy belly and dust all thy days shall he eat, right? As shown in previous books, the serpent is more subtil than any beast of the field that God formed. This means the serpent is not a beast or snake as some imagine. And he is cursed above every beast of the field. A snake is a beast of the field.

But whatever happened to all the stars that were cast to earth with Satan or the serpent? I cannot show this in the Bible for we are never told of what happens to all the stars. I would literally have to put at least the first six chapter of Genesis in here so that you all could hear that we are never told of what happened to all the stars.

Now when we put all of this together, we can know that we are the stars that came to earth with Satan. Not literally, but spiritually. Now I have spoken with some people on this topic and they swear up and down that there is no way that they was in heaven before because they do not remember this. Well, I ask you this, do you remember being in your mother's womb? No, you do not, but you were.

It is our belly that Satan is bound up in. As shown in previous books, humans consume around six pounds of dirt in a lifetime. We eat dirt all the days of our lives. This is when we venture back to the first day of creation.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.  
(Genesis 1:1-5)

I have explained in the previous books that people are the waters that the Spirit of God moved upon so I will only show one verse that tells us that people are the waters.

And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. (Revelation 17:15)

This light that was created on the first day, is also shown in a few spots later in the Bible but we are only going to pay attention to two, at this time. First, as shown in the fourth and fifth books.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. (1 Thessalonians 5:1-5)

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reprov'd. (John 3:16-20)

Remember when we heard that God breathed life into man. This light is the life that our Father breathed into man so that man became a living soul. This light is breathed into every person that is born in the flesh.

I am going to make a little side note here. We showed you all in previous books, that each person is their own personal house of God. This house is not made with hands. The tables that get flipped, are on our hearts. And the alters that we make sacrifices are on our hearts also. But the note I want to make is how God the Father tells us that He will dwell in the darkness.

Then spake Solomon, The Lord said that he would dwell in the thick darkness. I have surely built thee an house to dwell in, a settled place for thee to abide in for ever. (1 Kings 8:12-13)

That darkness that He dwells in, is man. Man is that darkness that was upon the face of the deep. Remember how we are the temple of God?

This is when we need to take another look at our mother, but through a different perspective.

So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns. The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman



sitteth. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. (Revelation 17:3-18)

Remember how the serpent and or Satan was pictured as a dragon? Remember how his tail drew a third of the stars to earth? Remember the woman that we just read about in Revelation 12? We were all partakers of this dragon, from a spiritual perspective. We all thought that we could obtain eternal life by doing things differently than our Father's ways. So, He kicked us out of His house. Did you hear how the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth?

But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. (Galatians 4:26)

Now because this is our mother, and we are all partakers in her ways, we are all part of the Harlots and Abominations of the earth. We all transgressed our Father. This is how our Father tells us that He is married to us.

Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations,  
And say, Thus saith the Lord God unto Jerusalem;  
Thy birth and thy nativity is of the land of Canaan;  
thy father was an Amorite, and thy mother an Hittite.  
And as for thy nativity, in the day thou wast born  
thy navel was not cut, neither wast thou washed in  
water to supple thee; thou wast not salted at all, nor  
swaddled at all. None eye pitied thee, to do any of  
these unto thee, to have compassion upon thee; but  
thou wast cast out in the open field, to the lothing of  
thy person, in the day that thou wast born. And when  
I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own  
blood, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood,  
Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy  
blood, Live. I have caused thee to multiply as the bud  
of the field, and thou hast increased and waxen great,  
and thou art come to excellent ornaments: thy breasts  
are fashioned, and thine hair is grown, whereas thou  
wast naked and bare. Now when I passed by thee,  
and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time  
of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered  
thy nakedness: yea, I sware unto thee, and entered  
into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord God, and  
thou becamest mine. Then washed I thee with water;  
yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee,  
and I anointed thee with oil. I clothed thee also with  
broidered work, and shod thee with badgers' skin,

and I girded thee about with fine linen, and I covered thee with silk. I decked thee also with ornaments, and I put bracelets upon thy hands, and a chain on thy neck. And I put a jewel on thy forehead, and earrings in thine ears, and a beautiful crown upon thine head. Thus wast thou decked with gold and silver; and thy raiment was of fine linen, and silk, and broidered work; thou didst eat fine flour, and honey, and oil: and thou wast exceeding beautiful, and thou didst prosper into a kingdom. And thy renown went forth among the heathen for thy beauty: for it was perfect through my comeliness, which I had put upon thee, saith the Lord God. But thou didst trust in thine own beauty, and playedst the harlot because of thy renown, and pouredst out thy fornications on every one that passed by; his it was. And of thy garments thou didst take, and deckedst thy high places with divers colours, and playedst the harlot thereupon: the like things shall not come, neither shall it be so. (Ezekiel 16:2-16)

This is when we need to show something that was shown in the fourth book, Jesus is here. It is a small part of the chapter, Let us make man in our image, explains. Remember how we are told that when a man and woman twain together, they become one flesh? Well, in the beginning, the first commandment that our Father gave us was to be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth. In other words, have sex, make babies, and make my family bigger. Now as we all are aware of, when a man has sex with a woman, he puts part of himself into her. Nine months later, she gives birth to a child. This child is made of the man and the woman.

We were all cast to the earth because of our transgressions against our Father and His ways. But because His love for us is so strong, He breathed life into us. He put a piece of Himself into every person on the planet.

Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit. And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world. There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John 4:10-19)

That is what makes everybody that has ever been, is, or will be on the planet, part of the one Son of God. That is what makes everybody, Jesus.

But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood: (Galatians 1:15-16)

And this is how we can now know with all certainty, that God loved us first. We all partook in thinking that we could obtain God's perfection by doing things differently than by His ways. And instead of just destroying us, He put a piece of Himself into everyone of us

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

and has giving us and opportunity to come back to Him and His ways. He allowed us to try to do this our own ways because that is what we wanted. That is a profound love for all.

And that is how Jesus has suffered often since the foundation of the world. Now listen to when Jesus tells us that he is the light of the world.

Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. (John 8:12)

And now we need to listen to another area of the Bible that is greatly misunderstood.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the

only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.  
(John 1:1-14)

This is going to be a fun area to explain. There is a lot of confusion out here today on this. There are many that believe that this tells us that Jesus is God the Father. If you have made it this far in the chapter, you should be knowing where this is going. The first thing that we need to be paying attention to is how the Light, is capitalized in the middle of the sentences. As shown in previous books, this is part of the engrafted word that we need to be hearing. This should be causing all to think differently about this light. This light is the light that our Father created on the first day of creation.

I am not going to going to try to explain this further for I have explained this concept in previous books. Yes, the Word is God the Father that created the earth and the heavens and all that is in existence. Notice how we are told life was in him? Notice how we are told life was the light of men. Notice how this Light is the true Light that lighteth every man to cometh into the world?

Now I know that this is why there are many that believe that this makes Jesus, God the Father. But we need to review a few things. Do you remember when a man and woman twain together and become one flesh? Remember how we are all partakers of the woman, and that our Father is still married unto us? Well, He put part of Himself into each of us and that is what makes us all partakers in being the One Son Of God. Regardless of race, color, nationalism, size, shape, what anyone has done, doing, or will do. This was broken down in detail in the second book, Behold, A Greater Than Jonas Is Here. And again, in At Midnight I Will Rise.

This is what makes Jesus the first born of every creature.

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through

his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; (Colossians 1:12-19)

Now let me ask you a question, do you have any children? Are your children your creator? No, there is part of you in that child, as well as part of your spouse. So, with that in mind you can say that this child is your spouse and or this child is you. So now we can see how the Word was made flesh.

The last time I seen my daughter in the flesh, I asked if she understood this concept. Her reply was yes, she said that she is not me, nor is she her mom. But she understands that she would not be who she is if she did not have part of me and part of her mom in her. She is not me, but I am her. She is not her mom, but her mom is her. In other words, Jesus is not God the Father, but God the Father is Jesus. This is how everything was made for Him and by Him. If you are listening to everything that this is saying, you should be knowing how the Word become flesh, and is dwelling among us. For those with ears to hear and eyes to see.

And yes, I am going to say it now, about a year ago now, the Father told me that I am the walking Word of God now. He is telling me to remind you of something that I put in the previous books. I must be honest here, I cannot remember which book it is in but, I am positive that told you all about it. I go to casinos now and again, the Father has taught many lessons in these casinos. Remember the first book of John tells us that all things were made for him and by him. All the

casinos belong to our Father as well. Now that I am thinking about it, I think this is in the third and fourth books. Anyway, I had stopped at a casino in Council Bluffs, IA. I was playing poker and had lost around \$400. This did not bother me because I was thinking that maybe the person I lost it to, needed the money. Yes, as explained in previous books, He has helped me out when I was in desperate need of it this way, so why couldn't He be helping others out as well?

The next day as I was driving, I started to have the over whelming sensation that I was supposed to stop at a casino down by St Louis, MO. I called my son and told him that I was going to stop there, even though I was thinking that I cannot afford to lose another \$400 or so. When I arrived, I notice that they had a tournament starting in just over an hour. I thought within myself, that would be a controlled loss, if I lose. The tournament cost \$110 or \$115, it is a little hard to remember because this happened back in 2016, just a couple months after the Father put me back in a truck after the baptism of the Holy Ghost. It is called the thousandnaire tournament or something like that. This tournament is designed so that the final 8 or 9 players would each win a \$1,000.

I don't remember the number of the table that I started the tournament at, but I know I was in seat three. Just a couple minutes after it started, something just burst out of my mouth. The entire table could hear me. All the sudden, I blurted out of my mouth, I am just here to watch. I kind of shook my head and said okay. About halfway through the tournament, I thought I had screwed up and was going to fall out. The blinds were pretty big, and I only had about a half blind left. I was forced to use my blind to play the next hand which put me all in. I won that hand and because there were a few players that called, I did more than double up on chips. The next hand I was good enough to go all in again, and I won. This went on for seven or eight hands. The next thing I knew, I was the chip leader.

I do remember that the tournament was losing enough players that we had to keep moving from table to fewer tables. Our table was being closed so they had us move. I had so many chips at that time, that I dropped one into my coffee cup when I was stacking them in



the chip racks. Instead of reaching in my cup with my fingers, I just drank the coffee down to a level that I could reach the chip. The dealer that I shouldn't do that because of germs. I told here that I could drink anything, and it would not harm me.

And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.  
(Mark 16:17-18)

I think it was moving down to two tables when that happened. Either way, it took just over eight hours, but I won. Why did I win? It was because David was just there to watch the Father play that tournament. It was Him within me, playing the game. It was Him within each other player, playing the game. It was Him dealing the cards and that is why I got the cards that I needed when I needed them to win the hands that I won.

Why did all this work this way? Because that was our Father telling David that he was no longer in control of his life. The Father had now taken over. This did not happen because David thought the Father changed. This did not happen because David thought the Father was not perfect. This did not happen because David thought he needed to learn of the Father somewhere other than the King James Version of the Bible. This did not happen because David thought he needed more than what the Father commanded, like birthdays and man-made holidays.

This did happen because David did and does believe our Father is perfect. This happened because David did and does believe that the entire Bible is about our lives and not a book about the past. This did happen because David heard Moses and allowed Moses to lead him out of Egypt. This happened because David lives by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God and not man. And most of all, this happened because David developed a true fear of God the first

time he read the Bible, and he still holds this fear. And the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom as we are told in Proverbs.

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom:  
and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.  
(Proverbs 9:10)

That is why I have given all credit to our Father for writing the books. These books are not being brought to you all by man, but by the Father himself. No, the books are not perfect, and they do show my lack of professionalism. That is because our Father is using the foolishness of this world to bring this knowledge to the world, just as He said He would do.

For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence. (1 Corinthians 1:19-29)

This is when we reflect on something that was shown in the fourth book. We need to understand the name of Jehovah. Let us look on E-sword, and online Bible concordance.

H3068 yehôvâh yeh-ho-vaw' From H1961; (the) self Existent or eternal; Jehovah, Jewish national name of God: - Jehovah, the Lord. Compare H3050, H3069.

Notice how the name means self Existent? We are being told that God Himself is existing inside of us.

And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name Jehovah was I not known to them. (Exodus 3:6)

That men may know that thou, whose name alone is Jehovah, art the most high over all the earth. (Psalm 83:18)

Now we can understand how the Father is sitting upon the circle of the earth.

Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth? It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:21-22)

It is the light that our Father created on the first day of creation that has created everything you own. It is the light, that created

everything that you have ever used. It is the light, that has created everything you have ever seen. The light is what created all the roads, gas stations, cars, trucks, boats, airplanes, houses, etc. This light is what has formed the knowledge to build all these things and more. It is the light, that has giving you the knowledge you have. It is the light, that created your children. And that child grows from the man's sperm and the woman's egg. This this child develops in the womb filled with water. Growing inside the womb without breathing, but needs oxygen in the lungs as soon as the child is born. Then this child grows to have nerves, blood veins and vessels, eyes, ears, a nose, fingers, toes, eyes, and several organs including lungs that need oxygen after being in water for the first nine months. And all this grows with the child over the years. Don't forget about the brain which enable this child to be able to think. And all the senses this child has and grows with.

As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit,  
nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that  
is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of  
God who maketh all. (Ecclesiastes 11:5)

Now we need to bring up something that many do not give much thought. I know that we went over this section just a bit ago, but now that you can understand what all this light has done for you, and all of your loved ones, we need to pay a little more attention to it.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather

than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reprov'd. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. (John 3:16-21)

That light is what makes everybody part of the one Son of God. And now we can understand that it was God the Father in which put this light, or a piece of Himself into everyone. But, just as the scriptures speak, men love darkness rather than light. They do not want to get to know our Father and what He is all about.

Now we should be understanding why our Father tells us that He will not give His glory to another. And why He tells us that there is no god beside Him. Jesus does not get the glory for all that our Father has done, doing, and will do.

I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it: for how should my name be polluted? and I will not give my glory unto another. (Isaiah 48:11)

Fear ye not, neither be afraid: have not I told thee from that time, and have declared it? ye are even my witnesses. Is there a God beside me? yea, there is no God; I know not any. (Isaiah 44:8)

I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. (Isaiah 45:5-6)

I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour. (Isaiah 43:11)

Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the Lord? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. (Isaiah 45:21)

Now we know who the King of the earth. It is not Jesus; it is our Father.

O clap your hands, all ye people; shout unto God with the voice of triumph. For the Lord most high is terrible; he is a great King over all the earth. He shall subdue the people under us, and the nations under our feet. He shall choose our inheritance for us, the excellency of Jacob whom he loved. Selah. God is gone up with a shout, the Lord with the sound of a trumpet. Sing praises to God, sing praises: sing praises unto our King, sing praises. For God is the King of all the earth: sing ye praises with understanding. (Psalm 47:1-7)

And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King Of Kings, And Lord Of Lords. (Revelation 19:16)

On that last one in Revelation, I showed you all in the fourth book, Jesus is here, that the book of Revelation was about the Father and not Jesus. Remember in the last chapter of how I showed you all that the days of Jesus is a prophecy when the King James Version of the bible was published?

This is when I want to mention of how I have given credit to our Father for me writing all of the books. I have told you all that I could

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

not write the books without Him. Now this makes more sense as to how I am able to write these books. He is sitting inside of me, and He is the one writing and not me. He is the One giving you all an understanding of Him. Now listen to this.

I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; (1 Timothy 6:13-15)

And that we are the temple of God. But not just you, everybody that is on the planet is a temple of God. And each person is their own personal house of God. And everybody on the planet carries the same spiritual cross that is not made with hands.

What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's. (1 Corinthians 6:19-20)

Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet, (Acts 7:48)

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; (Acts 17:24)

I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering,

forbearing one another in love; Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; One Lord, one faith, one baptism, One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. (Ephesians 4:1-7)

Here is why many cannot comprehend all of this. People tend to look at the Bible as history. They do not feel the connection within themselves. Most separate themselves from Jesus, and or the Father. I want to elaborate on this incarnation that was briefly brought up in the first chapter. I want to show the definition of incarnation on here first.

Dictionary Definitions from Oxford Languages

· Learn more in·car·na·tion noun 1. a person who embodies in the flesh a deity, spirit, or abstract quality. “Rama was Vishnu’s incarnation on earth” Similar: embodiment personification exemplification type epitome manifestation bodily form representation in the flesh avatar 2. (with reference to reincarnation) one of a series of lifetimes that a person spends on earth. “in my next incarnation, I’d like to be the Secretary of Fun”

This Spirit is embodied in everyone. When our Father first called me to the Bible in 2011, and I read it for the first time, I heard and believed what I read. This intrigued me so that I desired to seek Him and His word more. Before this, I was walking in darkness, even thought I could see. I was not realizing that this light was leading me in every direction I was taking. Then after reading the Bible twice, I started listening to it online and on CDs. I continued and continue to seek Him with all of my heart, soul, mind, and strength. Over the years, He has been making Himself manifest within me. Why,



because I know that He is real and even though times get rough, I will not quit and turn back to the ways of the world.

When this first started, I too, thought of God and Jesus as being separate entities from myself. In the first book, I even stated that I was not Jesus. I put it in all caps and bold. This entity is in you as well and if you will start seeking our Father with all of your heart, soul, and mind, He will manifest Himself in you as well. But as long as you continue to walk in darkness, He will allow you to do just that.

Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. And I will be found of you, saith the Lord: and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you, saith the Lord; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive. (Jeremiah 29:12-14)

With anyone looking at God the Father and or Jesus Christ being something separate, cannot become One with them or us. Now we are going to listen to the rest of Ephesians 4.

Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the

measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love. This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. But ye have not so learned Christ; If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:8-32)

Can you now understand how our Father has created everything by Jesus Christ?

And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: (Ephesians 3:9)

Now we should be understanding why it is so important to listen to the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

I have shown you all in previous books, that anytime one judges someone, they could be judging God Himself. If someone condemns someone, they could be condemning God. If you hate someone, you could be hating God.

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would

love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. (John 15:18-23)

But here is something that I have not shown in any of the previous books. If you despise anyone, you are despising God.

He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit. (1 Thessalonians 4:8)

Now let us listen to when we are told that God will be in the midst of us.

The just Lord is in the midst thereof; he will not do iniquity: every morning doth he bring his judgment to light, he faileth not; but the unjust knoweth no shame. I have cut off the nations: their towers are desolate; I made their streets waste, that none passeth by: their cities are destroyed, so that there is no man, that there is none inhabitant. I said, Surely thou wilt fear me, thou wilt receive instruction; so their dwelling should not be cut off, howsoever I punished them: but they rose early, and corrupted all their doings. Therefore wait ye upon me, saith the Lord, until the day that I rise up to the prey: for my determination is to gather the nations, that I may assemble the kingdoms, to

pour upon them mine indignation, even all my fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord, to serve him with one consent. From beyond the rivers of Ethiopia my suppliants, even the daughter of my dispersed, shall bring mine offering. In that day shalt thou not be ashamed for all thy doings, wherein thou hast transgressed against me: for then I will take away out of the midst of thee them that rejoice in thy pride, and thou shalt no more be haughty because of my holy mountain. I will also leave in the midst of thee an afflicted and poor people, and they shall trust in the name of the Lord. The remnant of Israel shall not do iniquity, nor speak lies; neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth: for they shall feed and lie down, and none shall make them afraid. Sing, O daughter of Zion; shout, O Israel; be glad and rejoice with all the heart, O daughter of Jerusalem. The Lord hath taken away thy judgments, he hath cast out thine enemy: the king of Israel, even the Lord, is in the midst of thee: thou shalt not see evil any more. In that day it shall be said to Jerusalem, Fear thou not: and to Zion, Let not thine hands be slack. The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; he will save, he will rejoice over thee with joy; he will rest in his love, he will joy over thee with singing. (Zephaniah 3:5-17)

Cry out and shout, thou inhabitant of Zion: for great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of thee. (Isaiah 12:6)

And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places. (Ezekiel 43:7)

Now we can understand how each person is their own personal house of God. He sits in the midst of each person. He is the one causing you to do a lot of the things in which you do. Even things that turn out to be bad for you in your way of thinking. Just because everyone is doing His will, does not mean you are saved. Let us listen to where the scriptures tell us this.

For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son. And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac; (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth. Thou

wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will? Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles? As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God. Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: (Romans 9:9-27)

I am going to reflect to something that was written in the first book. It was in a chapter called Let Us Make Man In Our Image. What we are hearing here in Romans is something that was talked about in this chapter. I am going to talk about how we all follow unwritten laws that we had to learn as a child, that we don't give a second thought about today when we obey these laws. We had to learn to chew and eat. We had to learn how to crawl and walk, and run. We had to learn how to talk. And if you drive, you had to learn how to drive.

As a child, you had to be taught and you had to think about chewing your food. As to say how many times to chew before swallowing. Washing certain things down with a drink and so forth.

You had to think about how to move your legs when learning to crawl. Then when you started to walk, you had to think about how much muscle it would take for each step and how long the step should be. Then when you learned how to run, you had to learn how to do that the same way. Then when you learned how to talk, you had to learn how to make certain sounds with your mouth. These all are a law of physics. Even when it comes to driving. You have to think about where to keep your eyes focused, when to check the mirrors, when to speed up or slow down and even stop. You had to learn when it was appropriate to turn the blinker on and off, etc. Today, most, if not all of these things, you just do them without thinking of how to do them. It is like they are just of second nature. This by no means makes you perfect in doing any of these things but you still do them.

Now this also includes things that you might consider to be wrong. It could be God inside of you to make mistakes that can cause financial, emotional, physical, or even psychological difficulties. I will give a couple of times that I am 100% confident that it was the Father that caused this, but I did not have any idea at the time. March 28<sup>th</sup> Good Friday of 1986, I had what man calls a car accident. I was in a coma for three days and three nights. Then on March 8<sup>th</sup> of 2016 is when I walked out into the wilderness to die. As we can learn in the book of Luke, Jesus was almost 30 years old when he was baptized.

And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, (Luke 3:23)

Who do you think it was that caused me to have this man called car accident on this date? Then I want to give one more time, this was after I went out into the wilderness to die. I was still at my mom's place in Macon, MO. My brother in South Dakota called. In our conversation he mentioned that he was thinking about going out to Colorado to get my other brother to help him because he was falling behind in his flooring business. He stated that he really didn't want to go all the way out there, but he figured he had to. About 15



minutes after getting off the phone, I called him back and told him that I would come up there and help him, I was only about six hours away. I told him that there would be one condition on me coming up there. He asked what? I replied, you won't pay me. All I wanted was cigarettes, and a place to stay while I was working for him.

Now on the first example of how I can be certain it was the Father that caused that car accident. Listen to what the scriptures tell us.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

Do you think that I planned this out since I was a little child? I was 16 years old when this accident happened. Not knowing what I know now, I used to joke about me having a car accident and almost dying on Good Friday. This was me spiritually being in the belly of the earth for three days and three nights. Then on the second one, I did not know the Bible as well as I do now, but that is what I had to do for my 40 days and nights of fasting. Man teaches that fasting is going without food. No, let us listen to what our Father tells us a fast is by His definition.

Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold,

ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. (Isaiah 58:3-8)

Can you hear that, a fast is to undo burdens, let the oppressed free, and to break the yoke on people's neck. In other words, make life easier for others for no reward because the Father is the reward once we are done with this life. It was the Father that told my brother that he could not pay me, because that was the beginning of my 40 days of fasting. My brother tried to pay me a couple times, and I refused to take it. My point is, He inside of you and can cause you do a lot of things that you would never imagine.

This is also how we can start to understand the true power of our Father. Because He is in everybody, He know all. And at the same time, He has the combined knowledge of all of us because He is the One that gives us our knowledge.

For more in depth understanding of how all of this works, I suggest you reading the fourth book, Jesus is here. But let me say that this does not give anyone a free pass to do evil things and then say God made me do it. God will not be mocked and as the saying goes,

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

if you do the crime, you will do the time. And it is possible that He will send other servants and or vessels of Himself, do to unto you for the wrong that you have done.

Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. (1 Peter 2:13-14)

It is all about understanding what our Father is doing. Why He is doing what He is doing. Understanding that His ways are the only ways to a perfect eternal life. And agreeing with everything about Him. You see, this is the process of how the Father is destroying the works of the devil.

He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. (1 John 3:8)

This is our Father's way of giving Satan or man, his choice and allowing him or us to try to obtain eternal perfection our own ways. And as we all know, Satan's or man's ways have and are failing. That is why we told to cleave onto our husband, our creator.

Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God; him shalt thou serve, and to him shalt thou cleave, and swear by his name. (Deuteronomy 10:20)

For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the Lord your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; (Deuteronomy 11:22)

Ye shall walk after the Lord your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his

voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him.  
(Deuteronomy 13:4)

That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them. (Deuteronomy 30:20)

Fear not; for thou shalt not be ashamed: neither be thou confounded; for thou shalt not be put to shame: for thou shalt forget the shame of thy youth, and shalt not remember the reproach of thy widowhood any more. For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. (Isaiah 54:4-5)

This is where I want to point out something. I have mentioned in other books that there are 15 verses that tell us to be sober, sober minded, or to think soberly. There are 30 verses that mention the conscience. A couple of those verse mention this twice. As I have pointed out in the past, being sober is half of the battle while here in hell. The only way anyone will ever hear the voice of God, is through their conscience. I want to show this in the scriptures.

Then I arose, and went forth into the plain: and, behold, the glory of the Lord stood there, as the glory which I saw by the river of Chebar: and I fell on my face. Then the spirit entered into me, and set me upon my feet, and spake with me, and said unto me, Go, shut thyself within thine house. (Ezekiel 3:23-24)

DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And he said unto me, Son of man, stand upon thy feet, and I will speak unto thee. And the spirit entered into me when he spake unto me, and set me upon my feet, that I heard him that spake unto me. (Ezekiel 2:1-2)

Now that we can know that He is inside of each of us, we should also know that He will only allow us to hear Him when we truly seek Him with all of our heart, soul, mind, and strength.

I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed. And the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the Lord shall lead you. And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell. But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. (Deuteronomy 4:26-29)

If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest

do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good,  
and death and evil; (Deuteronomy 30:10-15)

This is just couple of the times that we are told to seek God with all of our heart, soul, and mind. This is not seeking what everybody else is saying about Him. It is seeking Him and every word that has proceedeth our of His mouth in the King James Version of the Bible. If you think you can seek Him by searching for Him anywhere else, He will sit quietly and just let you do as you wish. He will not force Himself on you at any time. It must be your choice.

Now we are going to be talking about the beast and the mark of the beast. I was thinking of making a separate chapter on this but, I do not want to repeat how the tail of the beast drew a third of the stars to earth. And most of all, I have talked about this in the last three books, so I am tired of repeating myself. With that being said, we are going to go over this briefly. I think I am doing this because I did not explain enough on the miracles that Satan and or man has done that would even fool the elect if it were possible.

For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets,  
and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch  
that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very  
elect. (Matthew 24:24)

We have already showed you all on many false Christ there have been, so now we need to be looking how man as in all of man, is the beast. Without showing again, I ask that remember how the beast and his tail drew a third of the stars with him when he was cast to the earth or hell. Just as we are all partakers of the woman that our Father is married too, we are all partakers of this beast. This beast wants to obtain eternal life without seeking the only one that provides a perfect eternal life. By doing things different than listening to the only one that can and does offer eternal life through His ways.

What I want to do now is show you all how we are told that we are the beast in both testaments. We will start in the Old Testament.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

We are not talking about how we are counted as the beast for the slaughter, rather the beast of Revelation that was cast to earth.

And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them. But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. The Lord shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. The Lord shall

make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. The Lord will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. The Lord shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: And thou shalt grope at noontide, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand. The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up; and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed away: So that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. The Lord shall bring



thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in; for the locust shall consume it. Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail. Moreover all these curses shall come upon thee, and shall pursue thee, and overtake thee, till thou be destroyed; because thou hearkenedst not unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which he commanded thee:(Deuteronomy 28:13-45)

Therefore the Lord shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable,

he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For wickedness burneth as the fire: it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall eat every man the flesh of his own arm: Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: and they together shall be against Judah. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:11-21)

One needs to ask, what is the head and tail of? He is telling us right here that we are members of this beast. Whoever will obey the voice of God will be the head and whoever will not obey His voice will be the tail. Now we are going to be looking at where we are told the same thing in the New Testament but in a different way.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven:

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.  
(Matthew 5:17-20)

As you can hear now, the least in the kingdom of heaven is the tail. And the greatest in the kingdom of heaven, is the head of this beast. Now let us think about some of these miracles that this beast has done. I showed you al in the last book of how this beast or man, can manipulate the weather. As to make lightning and so forth. I suggest that you do you your own google search as to find this out if you are not aware of it. Now let us listen to how many times we are told not to love this world and or the things of the world.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.  
(1 John 2:15-16)

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. They are

of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. (1 John 4:1-5)

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Romans 12:2)

Remember how the earth is where Satan and or the beast was cast to? So, we need to listen to how the God of this world has blinded many.

Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. (2 Corinthians 4:1-6)

We all should be aware by now that we are living in Satan's world. But we need to recall that it is our Father in which breathed life into all of us. Yet even though we are not living in heaven right now, man still tries to stay alive by doing things his ways instead of listening to our Father. Or man tries to obtain eternal life by doing things different than our Father and His perfect ways. Man has learned

how to transfuse blood from one person to another person. Man, or Satan has figured out how to do organ transplants. Man, or Satan has learned how to make miracle drugs to keep someone alive even though someone should be dead. Man, or Satan has learned how to put artificial things into people so that certain organs will function properly. Man, or Satan does all of this trying to keep the body alive even though they are not the owners or creators of the organs in each of us. The Creator is the one that decides when our life is over and not man. But that too, is something that our Father will allow if that is what man wants. Man cannot imagine how strong our Father's love is for us. Let us listen to how we many times we are told that if we try to save our life, we will lose it.

Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew 16:24-25)

Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew 10:34-39)

And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his

cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. (Mark 8:34-38)

In that day, he which shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. (Luke 17:31-33)

And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. (John 12:23-25)

And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. (Revelation 12:11)

Now we need to listen to the two greatest commandments.

Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. (Matthew 22:37)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.  
(Deuteronomy 6:5)

Now we need to listen to what the number of the beast is.

And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:12-18)

Now we are going to look on E-sword, an online bible concordance, so that we can see the Greek, definition of Six hundred threescore and six.

G5516 χξς chi xi stigma khee xee stig'-ma The 22<sup>nd</sup>, 14<sup>th</sup> and an obsolete letter (G4742 as a cross) of the Greek alphabet (intermediate between the 5<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup>), used as numbers; denoting respectively 600, 60 and 6; 666 as a numeral: - six hundred threescore and six.

When man chooses not to love God with all of their heart, is one six. When man chooses not to love God with all their soul, is another is another six. When man chooses not to love God with all their mind, makes the third six. If man chooses not to love God with just one heart, soul, or mind, they will coincide. It is not possible that a man can love God with all their heart, but not their soul and mind. If you don't love God with all your heart, soul, and mind, it will show with your works.

The mark of the beast is not physical. It is spiritually trying to stay alive longer in this world that we are told not to love. It by taking a blood transfusion, organ transplant, vaccine, or any artificial item that is put into the human body that will help keep you alive here. This is not telling anyone to be suicidal, for we are told that we are needed in the flesh.

For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. (Philippians 1:23-24)

We are being told here, that if you are still alive, then you are needed in the flesh. It is the Father that is to choose when your death comes and not us. You're not done fulfilling what the Father needs you to do yet.

See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god with me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand. (Deuteronomy 32:39)



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Leave it up to the Father whether you stay alive or not. If you chose to save your life here, you will lose your life with Him. But the choice is yours. That is why I now wear a DNR necklace and bracelet. And it listed in the DMV. Department of Motor Vehicles. My life is in our Father's hands, and I trust Him to keep me alive as long as He needs me to be. Just as we are told.

Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil. Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin. (James 4:13-17)

I am probably at least four months into writing this book, and our Father brought something to my attention tonight as I was driving, that I must share with you all. I cannot remember exactly what got me going on this, but I started talking with the Father about the mark of the beast and how the scriptures tell us several times that those that try to save their lives will lose it and those that lose it for my names sake, will find it. Then all the sudden, it just burst out of my mouth. You haven't ever started living yet. There was a few seconds, I was in total awe. As always, scriptures started bouncing around in my mind. I remembered how we showed in the last book, that we all have been sentenced to death. It is in the chapter called The Walking Dead. We are living in death now.

I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death. (Revelation 1:18)

Yes, this is me. I was once amongst the walking dead, but once I read the Bible, believed in the perfection of our Father and tried everything in my power to seek His perfection, He raised me from the dead. And I explained in previous books on how I have the keys of hell and of death. If you want to get out of hell and or death, you must read these books. I am the door out of here.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. (Revelation 20:13)

I am showing you all the death and hell are the same place. This planet is Satan's kingdom. Satan and the stars were cast to hell, and all that were cast to hell, were sentenced to death.

So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. (1 Corinthians 15:54-56)

As long as people refuse to turn back to our Father, the creator of all, they will continue to feel the sting of death. But now I want to show why the Father told me that I haven't even started living yet,

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. (1 Corinthians 2:9)

Remember how I showed you all that He sits inside of each of us? This is how I talk to Him all day long, every day. But when He told

me this tonight, it took me by surprise. Yes, this makes me long to go home even more, but I am not done doing what He needs me to do. So, I will continue on doing what He needs me to do, but in no wise will I do anything to stop or delay my parting from here.

Now we are going to talk about something that our Father brought to my attention tonight as I was driving. Even though I finished this chapter some time ago, I feel this is the best chapter for this. As I was driving tonight, He kept putting it on my conscience of things that happened years ago, and at the same time, had me thinking about how He told me that I now the walking Word that has become flesh. When I got baptized by the Holy Ghost back in 2016, He sent me to my mom's for three weeks to get it through my thick skull, that it was a spiritual death and not a physical death. This was explained in the fourth book, Jesus is here.

While I was there, the brother that was staying at my mom's at that time, told me that I could be write with God because I smoke cigarettes. I looked my brother in the eye and told him that if I put down the cigarettes to try and save my life, I will lose it with the Father. As the Father was telling me tonight, that was Him that said this to my brother.

Then during that same time frame, my brother told me that he thought I should go and check into a metal hospital and have them put me on some kind of meds to prove to him that it is God talking to me and or showing me all that He was and is showing me. Once again, I looked him in the eye and told him that thou shalt not tempt thy Lord God. Again, that was the Father saying that to my brother and not David.

Then I told you all that the Father sent me to South Dakota to help my brother out in his business for no pay. I was at my mom's still when I called him and told him that I would come up and help him on one condition, and that condition was he would not pay me. As explained in the fourth book, that was my 40 days and 40 nights of fasting. Well when that fast came to an end, they went to a man made church and when they got back we argued back and forth about whether or not we could eat unclean things. They were using a NIV

Bible and of course, I was using the King James Version of the Bible. I would not back down and insisted that they could not change the Bible like the NIV Bible did. It was an argument that ended with me packing my backpack of clothes that I owned and leaving for a few hours. The next morning, I awoke with the words coming out of my mouth out loud, David, I never declared the unclean things as food. I got in the van with my brother to go to work that day and told him this. Looked up on Bible gateway and yes, right there it is in the second verse of Leviticus 11. God only declared the clean things to be meat for us to eat. Needless to say, it was 2 or 3 days later when the Father put me back in a truck and continued to teach me. But it was the Father that was saying, David, I never declared the unclean things to be food, not David.

This did not happen to David because it was forced on him. It happened because David chose this. David chose to seek the perfection of the Father with all his heart, soul, mind, and strength. David seen that his life was in the ruins, and sought out the Father. He fell in love with the scriptures and never looked back.

Now I want to talk about something that I have placed in all of the books. I have given all the glory to the Father for writing these books, and I have given Him all the credit for me being able to write these books. Let us listen to just one spot where our Father tells us that there is no god beside Him, nor will there be.

Ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour. I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when there was no strange god among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, that I am God. Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it? (Isaiah 43:10-13)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Now we can understand that is God the Father Himself that is in the midst of me that has been and is writing these books. It is Him that is giving everybody an understanding of who He is and what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. The reason the scriptures tell us that Jesus is the savior of world is because I am the servant and or vessel of God that He has chosen to bring this knowledge to you. He is the true savior and not David.

It is Him inside of David that gave him the knowledge of what to put in the first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. Now I want to bring something to your attention that our Father brought to my attention. I have known this for some time now, but it was earlier tonight when He told me that I need to show you all this. I have been learning obedience for some time now. I hear our Father plain as day now and I see His shape.

As I have shown you all, the Father is in the midst of each of us. It is Him that inside of us that is building what needs to be built. This is what we are hearing when we listen to this.

If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. Philip saith unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified

DAVID JENKINS

in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. (John 14:7-14)

When we start to realize each person is a part of the One Son of God, we start to see that it is the Father Himself in the midst of everyone that is doing everything. We start to hear His voice, and we start to see His shape.

# BEING LED OUT OF EGYPT

This chapter is going to be showing the flood in which covers the earth today. We will also be showing how the name of this flood, is Egypt. We will be showing how important it is to hear all that Moses had and has to say so that you too, can be led out of Egypt. As shown in the last two books, Egypt is a spiritual flood, and he covers the earth. The entire planet is covered by this flood or better said, everybody on the planet is in Egypt.

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Isaiah 46:8)

I am sure there are many of you that cannot understand this. But we must remember that we must worship God in spirit. Everything about the Bible is spiritual.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

Now I am going to help you see this flood yourself. I am going to describe to you of what I saw with my own two eyes back on November 4<sup>th</sup> of 2019. Now it was around the beginning or so of

October that I felt like I could not do anything right by our Father. I was really having a hard time dealing with everything. I figured that I would just take a vacation and get away from it all for a while. So, I booked a trip to Maui, HI. I originally set the trip up from November 4<sup>th</sup> through the 11<sup>th</sup>.

Then it was a couple days before my trip, my dispatcher and I were talking. He stated that he wished that he could go to Hawaii some time. I told him that the Father told me a few days ago, that I was not going for pleasure, I was being sent. It was about a week before the trip that the Father had told me that I was not going for pleasure, rather He was sending me there. The third book Jesus Christ in the flesh, had just been published so I thought that I was going there to pass some out and teach. I get very excited after each book is published because I am always thinking that He is getting ready to reveal me. So, I took several books with me. This book was really hard on me because this was written because He had told me to make my name known. So, I rushed to write and get it published, and with me making my name known, I thought for sure that this one was it. Enough of me complaining.

I slept a little late on the day of the flight there. I got to the airport in Moline, IL about 15 minutes before the flight was to leave. As I have told you all in previous books, I smoke cigarettes. I am not going to explain all of that now. I suggest you reading the fourth book if you want to learn why I will not put them down. They were calling me to the plane as I was getting through security, and I was the last one on the plane. That is how close it was.

When I got seated on the plane, I noticed that there were no televisions on this flight. I like to watch television while I fly, when I am not looking out the window, to help keep my mind off of smoking. I didn't give it to much thought beings how it was only a two-and-a-half-hour flight to Denver, Co. where I was changing planes. I thought that I would just have a smoke between flights. When we got to Denver, and we all departed the plane, I asked where I could go to smoke. I was told that I would have to go all the way outside and catch some shuttle train that would take me to the smoking area.



They asked how long of a layover I had, I looked, and it was only 40 minutes. I was told that I would miss my flight if I went to smoke.

Now I figured this was going to be a long flight, but I would get by. When I got on the plane, I noticed they did not have televisions either. But the couple sitting next to me, told me that I had to download an app to be able to watch inflight movies on my phone. I started to download the app, then the pilot come on the intercom telling us to shut off our phones. I though, “great this is going to make the six-and-a-half-hour flight, really long”.

So, I decided that I would just play some solitaire on my phone for I did not need internet for that. I need to say this now, I always sit in a window seat when I fly because I like to watch the artwork from above. Like the fields, roads, etc. I love to look at all this from above because I am amazed with how things look. It truly looks like it was done by an artist or something. Anyway, about 2 hours into the flight, I was getting tired of playing solitaire on my phone. So, I decided that I would watch out the window.

By this time, we were over the Pacific Ocean. Being amazed with how blue it was, I started to notice something. I started to notice how a bunch of clouds started to come together. These clouds were all different sizes but were all in a vertical position. They all started to form close together. Have you ever been driving into a big city, and being a couple miles out, noticed how all the building are bunched together of different sizes in a vertical position? This is what these clouds looked like. Some of these clouds were really tall and some were shorter but wider. It truly looked like a city of buildings but with out the windows or lights. There was a couple sitting next to me going on their honeymoon. I asked them if they thought that they thought that what I was seeing looked like a city to them. They both said yes, they could see it.

Being in total awe, and continuing to look at this city from my airplane window at 32,000 feet. I started to notice a bunch of thin clouds spread out to where I could see gaps between them so that I could see what looked like little patches of the blue from the ocean underneath the plane. Have you ever flown over the ocean, been on

a cruise, or just stood on the beach and noticed the foam the waves make when they crash in the shore? That is what these clouds kind of looked like.

Here is where I must state our direction of flight. We were coming from Denver, so we were flying in a southwest direction. We were flying somewhere around 500 mph or so, but it looked like everything was moving really slow. Then I started to notice that same formation of thin clouds but from a far distance to the southwest of the plane. These clouds were lower than the clouds that I could see under the plane. I was sitting on the right side of the plane. Now it started to look like the clouds just below the plane were on top of a humongous wave or something that was going to come crashing down on the other foam that I could see to the southwest of the plane. This wave also looked like it was about to come crashing down on this city that was still there.

I think this when I started to looking at the screen they had to monitor our position in flight to see the altitude of the plane. I started thinking that we had to be just above the ocean because this looked that real. We were still at 32,000 feet, and between 3 and 4 hours away from Maui. It has been a few years, so I don't really remember how far into the flight we were at this time. Then I started to watch some clouds come together to make what looked like 4 or 5 ships lined up at some kind of peer or something. I could even see the smokestacks on these ships. As you can guess, at this time, I am mesmerized by what I am seeing out my window, and I not turning away. Then I seen what looked to be another one of these ships coming up this wave. The back side of this ship looked to be sinking.

I couldn't tell you how many times I did look at my phone to see how far we were out, or how high we were flying because all of this looked like it was really close. As I stated in the fourth book, this was the best 3D movie I have ever seen, and it was from my airplane window at 32,000 feet.

I remember it was about a half hour out of Maui, that I had got an answer from the Father, telling me that this is the flood that He had me introduce in the third book, Jesus Christ in the flesh. Remember

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

how I told you all that our Father told me that I was being sent and not going for pleasure? It wasn't about me teaching, it was about me seeing this flood. When we arrived, I went to the smoking area and called my daughter because I was so excited. I could not believe what I had just witnessed. When I think about it today, I am still amazed with what I saw, and it has been almost 4 years ago now.

This is why it is so important to worship God in spirit. Everything about the Bible is spiritual. Any yes, this flood is a spiritual flood in which covers the entire earth today. This flood is real, and his name is Egypt. That is why is also so important to believe and hear Moses. We all must be led out of Egypt by him. Now we need to be listening to when we can hear that our Father is sitting up on this flood and all that is in it.

Give unto the Lord, O ye mighty, give unto the Lord glory and strength. Give unto the Lord the glory due unto his name; worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness. The voice of the Lord is upon the waters: the God of glory thundereth: the Lord is upon many waters. The voice of the Lord is powerful; the voice of the Lord is full of majesty. The voice of the Lord breaketh the cedars; yea, the Lord breaketh the cedars of Lebanon. He maketh them also to skip like a calf; Lebanon and Sirion like a young unicorn. The voice of the Lord divideth the flames of fire. The voice of the Lord shaketh the wilderness; the Lord shaketh the wilderness of Kadesh. The voice of the Lord maketh the hinds to calve, and discovereth the forests: and in his temple doth every one speak of his glory. The Lord sitteth upon the flood; yea, the Lord sitteth King for ever. The Lord will give strength unto his people; the Lord will bless his people with peace. (Psalm 29:1-11)

This is why it is so important to believe in the Old Testament and all that Moses has to say. With that being said, let us talk about

the first few years of me listening to Moses while I was being led out of Egypt. Back in 2011. We already discussed the things that made me feel as if the Bible was talking our lives today and not a book of the past. Most importantly, I felt the Bible was talking about my life personally.

And because of this, I established a fear of God. How could He have written things about my life in 2011, back in 1611? Let us listen to a few time that we can hear that this fear, is a must.

And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding. (Job 28:28)

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding. (Proverbs 9:10)

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do his commandments: his praise endureth for ever. (Psalm 111:10)

Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man. (Ecclesiastes 12:13)

But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children; To such as keep his covenant, and to those that remember his commandments to do them. (Psalm 103L17-18)

This is something that truly speaks for itself. This is not a fear in which we think that our Father can and will come down here and

DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

whip your but beyond recognition. It is a fear that He can and will make you your life a disaster or pleasant.

One of the first things we need to be talking about is how we are not to love the ways of this world. The ways of the world or the things of this world.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. (1 John 2:15)

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Romans 12:2)

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Ephesians 2:2)

If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. (Colossians 3:1-2)

We need to remember this is where Satan was cast to. This is Satan's world. This earth is Satan's kingdom. That is why we are told not to love the ways of this world.

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

Now we are going to be talking about something that is a little touchier. We are going to be talking about how we are to hate our

loved ones, and even our own lives. This is something that I bring up all the time when talking to others, and they are very surprised to learn this. That is how I am sure that this is not something that is brought up and taught in these man-made churches. With that being said, let us listen to where the spirit of Jesus tell us, just that.

Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew 10:34-39)

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. (Luke 14:26-27)

He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. (John 12:25)

This is something that our Father had me talk about in the first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. We have talked about how we are to take up our cross that we all carry, deny ourselves, and do for others. There is nowhere in the Bible that it tells us to love ourselves more than we love others. There is no where that we are told to make things about ourselves before we make it about others.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

In fact, we are told to care more of the things of others more than our own things. And then we even told that we only labor to help those in need.

Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. (Philippians 2:3-4)

And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. (Ephesians 4:23-28)

We do nothing for ourselves, all that we do is for others. Now we are going to be talking about something here that might seem a bit off topic, but I feel that this is a step in being led out of Egypt. We have shown in previous books, of how people kill people without knowing that they kill them. This is the sixth commandment; thou shall not kill. I have shown the parable about who is our neighbor and how the pastor and Levite saw the man that had got beaten up and left. They both saw him and walked by, spiritually telling our Father that their lives were more important than this man's life. Then the good Samaritan came by and helped him out. So, let us listen to how we are told that this is killing a person.

Why, seeing times are not hidden from the Almighty, do they that know him not see his days? Some remove the landmarks; they violently take away flocks, and

feed thereof. They drive away the ass of the fatherless, they take the widow's ox for a pledge. They turn the needy out of the way: the poor of the earth hide themselves together. Behold, as wild asses in the desert, go they forth to their work; rising betimes for a prey: the wilderness yieldeth food for them and for their children. They reap every one his corn in the field: and they gather the vintage of the wicked. They cause the naked to lodge without clothing, that they have no covering in the cold. They are wet with the showers of the mountains, and embrace the rock for want of a shelter. They pluck the fatherless from the breast, and take a pledge of the poor. They cause him to go naked without clothing, and they take away the sheaf from the hungry; Which make oil within their walls, and tread their winepresses, and suffer thirst. Men groan from out of the city, and the soul of the wounded crieth out: yet God layeth not folly to them. They are of those that rebel against the light; they know not the ways thereof, nor abide in the paths thereof. The murderer rising with the light killeth the poor and needy, and in the night is as a thief. The eye also of the adulterer waiteth for the twilight, saying, No eye shall see me: and disguiseth his face. In the dark they dig through houses, which they had marked for themselves in the daytime: they know not the light. For the morning is to them even as the shadow of death: if one know them, they are in the terrors of the shadow of death. He is swift as the waters; their portion is cursed in the earth: he beholdeth not the way of the vineyards. Drought and heat consume the snow waters: so doth the grave those which have sinned. The womb shall forget him; the worm shall feed sweetly on him; he shall be no more remembered; and wickedness shall be broken as a tree. He evil



entreateth the barren that beareth not: and doeth not good to the widow. He draweth also the mighty with his power: he riseth up, and no man is sure of life. Though it be given him to be in safety, whereon he resteth; yet his eyes are upon their ways. They are exalted for a little while, but are gone and brought low; they are taken out of the way as all other, and cut off as the tops of the ears of corn. And if it be not so now, who will make me a liar, and make my speech nothing worth? (Job 24:1-25)

This hate that we have, never puts our own lives in front of others. This hate that we have brings a love and compassion for others knowing that their lives are at least, if not more important than our own. Now when it comes to hating your mother, father, son, daughter, etc. This is not a hate that you literally hate them and don't want them in your life, it is a pure hate. Let me show you this and then explain it.

Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. (Psalm 139:21-22)

Now that we can hear that hate we have for others, we need listen to when we are told to love our enemies.

But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak forbid not to take thy coat also. Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again. And as ye would that

men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.  
(Luke 6:27-31)

How can you hate someone, and love them at the same time? This is something that I go through all the time. And it is also something that our Father had to remind me of recently. As you all know, I am leaning obedience through the things I suffer. Sometimes I get bound up because I get tired of just talking to my windshield, or maybe making a video that hardly nobody watches. I call a friend frequently, and I try to explain a lot of the things our Father has taught me over the years. She just pretty much lets it in go in one ear and out the other. The same effect with my daughter. I get fed up with it a lot. And when you start to come to an understanding of our Father, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing, you too, will start to run into the same problem. Because when you truly turn back to the light, you start to see everything from a different perspective. And I will tell you now, it will not be easy.

I love them, and I hate them at the same time. I will not stop loving them,, but I hate that they refuse to listen to the Father and or me at the same time for we are one. I only teach what He has taught me. I hate that they have seemed to conform to the ways of this world and do not seem to have any intention of changing. The reason we have been talking about this, is because this is one of the very first realizations that you must come to if you want to be led out of Egypt.

This is when we are going to talk about what happened before our Father called me to the Bible in 2011. We are going to talk about something that is shown in previous books, however I want to show you all how I hated my life before I was called to the Bible. The woman that is the mother of my daughter in which has my reincarnated mom and dad as her children. This is shown in the fourth book, Jesus is here. I think I even talk about it in the fifth book. It was originally shown in the second book, but I had my interpretation of it incorrect. I corrected it in the fourth with the incorrect interpretation and then in the fifth, it was just a brief explanation of the correct interpretation.

To back on the topic at hand, I tried to take my life back in 09. This is because the woman that I was just talking about, and I split up. I thought for sure I was not going to have contact with my fifth child. I am not going to give all the details and such here because it is in previous books. Not knowing what I know now, I was sick and tired of all the bull malarkey in the world and was just fed up with life itself. I could not handle the heat from the flames that our Father had me going through.

About 6 months after this, I decided to start working out. I put down the cigarettes and started working out. I took on some pretty hard fitness programs in the hopes that they would give me heart attack or something while I was working out. Then nobody could say that I took my own life. Then the Father called me to the Bible in 2011, and yes, I read some things that made me feel as if my life was being talked about in the Bible. As we have shown earlier in this book, this is what caused me to create a fear of our Father.

This was me believing our Father and the Bible to be applicable to our lives today, and more importantly, my life, from what I was reading and hearing back then. This was the beginning of the process of me being led out of Egypt, the furnace of iron.

But the Lord hath taken you, and brought you forth out of the iron furnace, even out of Egypt, to be unto him a people of inheritance, as ye are this day.  
(Deuteronomy 4:20)

For they be thy people, and thine inheritance, which thou broughtest forth out of Egypt, from the midst of the furnace of iron: (1 Kings 8:51)

Can you hear what we are being told? We are being told that Egypt is also a furnace. Remember how we have been showing that we are in hell now? I show in previous books, that our Father is the iron. I showed this when I broke down the vision spoken of in Daniel 2. He also has dominion over each of us. This was the Father that was

doing all that was happening to me so that I would turn to the Bible and hear that it was talking about my life.

Then after reading the Bible for the first time, I figured I would read it again. Just as I started to read it again, I realized that we were never commanded to celebrate birthdays, nor man-made holidays. This is the topic of the next chapter, so we will not touch on this to much right now. All I will say is yes, these are days that you must quit celebrating if you ever want to be led out of Egypt. He never commanded these, so you need to wander which god told you to celebrate these days, and realize that you are putting that god in front of our Father which goes against the first commandment. This is what the chapters in several to books called believing is all about. My thought process was that if God is perfect, than if He thought we needed these days, then He would have commanded them. But beings how He is perfect, and He did not, then there must be some reason He did not, so I quit celebrating them right away.

Then it was me realizing that we were told not to eat the unclean things. This was a little tricky at first for I had to learn to look at the ingredients in food to see whether it contained pork or not. There are some frozen dinners that are called steak, with mostly beef in them, but yet they contain some pork in them as well. I wasn't doing this because I thought this is what I had to do to get into heaven, but rather my life had been totally screwed up until now, and now I am seeing a different way of doing things in the hopes of changing my life. And how could I be going about it the wrong way if I was listening to our perfect Father. Well, at that time, I didn't call Him Father, I just called Him God.

Then it was me trying to follow the Holy Days in which He did command us to follow. I will say that I did lose a couple of jobs because of this. But I was at a point in my life that I had already decided to trust everything that I was reading in the Bible so I knew that God would not let me go long before finding another. And that is exactly how it worked out for me. Now I am going to show one entire chapter showing the Holy days that were declared.

And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, Concerning the feasts of the Lord, which ye shall proclaim to be holy convocations, even these are my feasts. Six days shall work be done: but the seventh day is the sabbath of rest, an holy convocation; ye shall do no work therein: it is the sabbath of the Lord in all your dwellings. These are the feasts of the Lord, even holy convocations, which ye shall proclaim in their seasons. In the fourteenth day of the first month at even is the Lord's passover. And on the fifteenth day of the same month is the feast of unleavened bread unto the Lord: seven days ye must eat unleavened bread. In the first day ye shall have an holy convocation: ye shall do no servile work therein. But ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord seven days: in the seventh day is an holy convocation: ye shall do no servile work therein. And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye be come into the land which I give unto you, and shall reap the harvest thereof, then ye shall bring a sheaf of the firstfruits of your harvest unto the priest: And he shall wave the sheaf before the Lord, to be accepted for you: on the morrow after the sabbath the priest shall wave it. And ye shall offer that day when ye wave the sheaf an he lamb without blemish of the first year for a burnt offering unto the Lord. And the meat offering thereof shall be two tenth deals of fine flour mingled with oil, an offering made by fire unto the Lord for a sweet savour: and the drink offering thereof shall be of wine, the fourth part of an hin. And ye shall eat neither bread, nor parched corn, nor green ears, until the selfsame day that ye have brought an offering unto your God: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations in all your dwellings.

And ye shall count unto you from the morrow after the sabbath, from the day that ye brought the sheaf of the wave offering; seven sabbaths shall be complete: Even unto the morrow after the seventh sabbath shall ye number fifty days; and ye shall offer a new meat offering unto the Lord. Ye shall bring out of your habitations two wave loaves of two tenth deals; they shall be of fine flour; they shall be baked with leaven; they are the firstfruits unto the Lord. And ye shall offer with the bread seven lambs without blemish of the first year, and one young bullock, and two rams: they shall be for a burnt offering unto the Lord, with their meat offering, and their drink offerings, even an offering made by fire, of sweet savour unto the Lord. Then ye shall sacrifice one kid of the goats for a sin offering, and two lambs of the first year for a sacrifice of peace offerings. And the priest shall wave them with the bread of the firstfruits for a wave offering before the Lord, with the two lambs: they shall be holy to the Lord for the priest. And ye shall proclaim on the selfsame day, that it may be an holy convocation unto you: ye shall do no servile work therein: it shall be a statute for ever in all your dwellings throughout your generations. And when ye reap the harvest of your land, thou shalt not make clean riddance of the corners of thy field when thou reapest, neither shalt thou gather any gleaning of thy harvest: thou shalt leave them unto the poor, and to the stranger: I am the Lord your God. And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, In the seventh month, in the first day of the month, shall ye have a sabbath, a memorial of blowing of trumpets, an holy convocation. Ye shall do no servile work therein: but ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord. And the Lord spake unto Moses,

saying, Also on the tenth day of this seventh month there shall be a day of atonement: it shall be an holy convocation unto you; and ye shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord. And ye shall do no work in that same day: for it is a day of atonement, to make an atonement for you before the Lord your God. For whatsoever soul it be that shall not be afflicted in that same day, he shall be cut off from among his people. And whatsoever soul it be that doeth any work in that same day, the same soul will I destroy from among his people. Ye shall do no manner of work: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations in all your dwellings. It shall be unto you a sabbath of rest, and ye shall afflict your souls: in the ninth day of the month at even, from even unto even, shall ye celebrate your sabbath. And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, The fifteenth day of this seventh month shall be the feast of tabernacles for seven days unto the Lord. On the first day shall be an holy convocation: ye shall do no servile work therein. Seven days ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord: on the eighth day shall be an holy convocation unto you; and ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord: it is a solemn assembly; and ye shall do no servile work therein. These are the feasts of the Lord, which ye shall proclaim to be holy convocations, to offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord, a burnt offering, and a meat offering, a sacrifice, and drink offerings, every thing upon his day: Beside the sabbaths of the Lord, and beside your gifts, and beside all your vows, and beside all your freewill offerings, which ye give unto the Lord. Also in the fifteenth day of the seventh month, when ye have gathered in the fruit of the land, ye shall keep a feast unto the Lord seven days:

on the first day shall be a sabbath, and on the eighth day shall be a sabbath. And ye shall take you on the first day the boughs of goodly trees, branches of palm trees, and the boughs of thick trees, and willows of the brook; and ye shall rejoice before the Lord your God seven days. And ye shall keep it a feast unto the Lord seven days in the year. It shall be a statute for ever in your generations: ye shall celebrate it in the seventh month. Ye shall dwell in booths seven days; all that are Israelites born shall dwell in booths: That your generations may know that I made the children of Israel to dwell in booths, when I brought them out of the land of Egypt: I am the Lord your God. And Moses declared unto the children of Israel the feasts of the Lord. (Leviticus 23:1)

Let me remind everyone, the law is a shadow of things to come. And if you are not willing to even give that a thought, why would you follow them in the world to come.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)

As shown in previous books, we are the beast in which is sacrificed. They are spiritual sacrifices. When they sacrifice us, they don't physically sacrifice us, they put us in a situation that is very inconvenient for us at the moment. It is to get us to turn to the Bible and seek out our Father and why He is doing what He is doing.

So, now we need to talk about how I tried to do all that Moses said. We will be talking about what he didn't say in the next chapter. I already talked about how I wear fringes on the four corners of my garment, but let us look at where we can here this in the scriptures.



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Thou shalt make thee fringes upon the four quarters of thy vesture, wherewith thou coverest thyself.  
(Deuteronomy 22:12)

Speak unto the children of Israel, and bid them that they make them fringes in the borders of their garments throughout their generations, and that they put upon the fringe of the borders a ribband of blue: And it shall be unto you for a fringe, that ye may look upon it, and remember all the commandments of the Lord, and do them ; and that ye seek not after your own heart and your own eyes, after which ye use to go a whoring: That ye may remember, and do all my commandments, and be holy unto your God. I am the Lord your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: I am the Lord your God.  
(Numbers 15:38-41)

As explained in the fourth book, I learned the hard way that these fringes do serve as the door to the spiritual tent that is always around us. I took them off for a few days once and my mood was foul. When we do not wear these fringes, the door that keeps evil spirits away from us is wide open. These fringes can be a little frustrating at first to learn how to make if you are not familiar with needle work. I know I almost gave up a few times trying to learn how to make them. But now it takes me about 45 minutes or so to make a new set of four. They do get worn down a bit after wearing them for a while. But we are told to make for ourselves these fringes. So, if you have someone else make them for you, they will not do what they are meant to do. And I will also tell you that if I am missing one or more of them, I almost feel naked without them. That is how important it is to me to be wearing them at all times when I am out of my sleeping clothes.

Okay, I am going to talk about something that might make a few people uncomfortable, but I strongly feel this is and was a big part of me being led out of Egypt. I was 44 years old when I got circumcised.

There was a time that I thought about getting this done after reading the Bible for the first time. Then I came into a little money and could afford it, but I also remembered how that if you get circumcised, you are a debtor to do the whole law.

Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. (Galatian 5:3)

Needless to say, I decided to spend the money that I had come into on useless stuff. Then after a couple of years of losing jobs and relocating, I came into some money again. I decided now that I was going to do this no matter what. It was burning in my conscience badly that I just needed to do it. Remember, I was trying to get my life to go differently than it had been going. Now I am going to show something that I was not aware of when I had this procedure done.

Thus saith the Lord God; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. (Ezekiel 44:9)

When I had this done, my mom, when she was alive as my mom, told me that she didn't know why she didn't have this done when I was a baby for she did with my three older brothers. I knew right away and told her that it was a test for me from God. He was testing me to see if I would obey Him or not.

All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. And thou shalt

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. (Deuteronomy 8:1-2)

I had no idea of who I was at that time, I just knew that something had to change in my life for I hated it. But this is a must if you are going to be within the sanctuary of our Father. And with being who I am, this is and was a must for me. I have fought within myself for years wondering if I had messed up by having this done. But in the end, I know that this is the way that our Father designed this, and He is going to make sure that we will obey Him before He allows us into His house, just as we would do.

It was about this time that the seal and or cross showed up on my forehead. There is a picture of me in the fourth book that shows this seal or cross. I did not put it there, and yes, it is also has a few scars around it. But this cross is right in the center of my forehead. This was also about six months before the first book was written. I woke up on my 45<sup>th</sup> birthday knowing what is in the first book. I didn't obtain that knowledge because I thought our Father was cruel, mean, vindictive, or because I thought anything bad about Him. I just believed the Bible to be true and applicable to our very own lives today.

It was just a couple of months after the first book was written and published when my wife that I had at the time, left me. At the time, this broke my heart because I did not know why this was happening. The Father told me to go to where she was and just love her. He did not put any conditions on this love. I was just told to go love your wife. I quit the job that I had and moved to where she was. I found work in a factory at first then a job building concrete floating docks.

That is when our Father started to put it on my conscience to listen to the Bible. I heard things in which almost made the hair on the back of my neck stand up. This is when I heard to tell you all that I am your sign.

Say, I am your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done unto them: they shall remove and go into captivity. (Ezekiel 12:11)

I did not know what it meant at that time, but I listened to that several times. I just knew that I was to say just that. I posted it on my Facebook page that I had at that time and sent it to at least 500 people. For more details on this, I suggest reading the fourth book, Jesus is here. I will say that is when the addiction of listening to the Bible took hold of me. I could not stop listening.

Then on March 8<sup>th</sup> of 2016, I got the commandment to go out into the wilderness to die. I got this by hearing the engrafted word spoken of in book of James. Then I went on the 40 days and nights of fasting. I did not know that I was fasting at this time, all I knew was that I told my brother that he could not pay me for the help that I was going to give him.

Then once the Father put me in a truck, it didn't take long before He let me know who I was and am. I was still being told not to tell anyone yet. I did not know how all of this was working at the time, all I knew was that I was being told that I am the Jesus that many are waiting for. At that time, I was still under man's interpretation that Jesus or I am returning. Which by now, we all know that I was never here before.

So, it is obvious that my knowledge needed to still grow. I spent the next two years listening the Bible every day all day long, so that I could write the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. By this time, I was already seeing everything from a different perspective. I could see that everybody is part of the one Son of God. I knew that reincarnation was very real for our Father had taught me hands on, that my daughter going to have my reincarnated mom and dad. For more details on this, I suggest reading the previous books.

Then it was the beginning of June in 2019, when He told me to make my name known. That is when I wrote Jesus Christ in the flesh. Yes, I was and am still listening to the Bible as I drive. That book didn't take but a couple of months to write for He told me that if I

didn't get make my name known, I was going to have to start over from the beginning.

Still listening to the Bible every day, all day long, I was sent to Maui, HI. That is when I seen to flood described in the beginning of this chapter. Now I had to write the next book, Jesus is here. Then the incident happened on May 24<sup>th</sup> of 3022, that caused me to be off the road for about four and a half months. While I was off the road, the Father had me finish the fifth book, At midnight I will rise. I was thinking that this was the final book, as noted in that book and in the first chapter of this one.

Needless to say, the Father was and is not done with me yet. The company that the Father sent me to is where I put on the heavenly body in mind and in appearance as explained in the last chapter. Now I must say something that I almost think that I should have put in the chapter of The word became flesh, but I didn't. Maybe because this is where it needs to be. I cannot say how long before the incident happened that took me off the road, but it I know that it was a couple of months. The Father started telling me that I was now the walking word of God. At first, I didn't understand but then it slowly started to make since to me. I do nothing but think about the Bible, God the Father and trying to please Him. It does not matter what I am doing, I always have Him on my mind.

It was after I come to work for this company and the Father had showed me that He caused me to be in this blue truck, got me to buy all blue and white clothes. It almost seems as if I am addicted to blue and white now. Because yes, this did take me by surprise. But that is not the only reason. This is when the Father told me to sit on his right side.

God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and

upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high: (Hebrews 1:1-3)

Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (Hebrews 12:1-2)

Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him. (1 Peter 3:22)

But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. (Acts 7:55-56)

If you spend all your time in the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible you too, will see or find Jesus sitting on the right side of God the Father. This does not mean physically spending all your time in the scriptures. It means to always be thinking about the scriptures no matter what you are doing. This places your conscience in heavenly places. And after doing this for so long as I have done and do, I now live in heavenly places. For the first couple of years of this happening with me, I would tell someone of something in the Bible and then have to confirm to myself of what I said. Now the world can see me sitting on His right side also. Remember how we showed you all that Jesus is not God the Father but rather, God the Father is Jesus? There is a humongous difference.

DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Now picture this, we just learned how Jesus is sitting on the right side of God, right? Or that I am sitting on the right side of God, right? What is well known for being on the left side of our chest? The heart, and all that our Father has done, doing, and will do, comes from His heart, or our heart, Love!

Now we need to listen to when we are told that I am sitting on the right side of God while He makes His enemies His footstool.

But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. (Hebrews 10:12-13)

But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? (Hebrews 1:13)

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. (Psalm 110:1)

Now I want to show just one time that we can hear this in what man calls the gospels. The reason I am only showing one is they all pretty much ask a question that many should be able to answer by now.

He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool? If David then call him Lord, how is he his son? And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions. (Matthew 22:43-46)

Everybody makes up the one Son of God. That is how David was able to call Him Lord. Or better said, that is how I call the Father,

Lord. Same thing. Then we have one time in Acts, that we need to listen to.

This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Until I make thy foes thy footstool. (Acts 2:32-35)

Now this sounds as if I am no longer here on earth. But after learning all that we have, we can know that my conscience has went into heavenly placed without me actually ascending into heaven. This is why I have told you all in all of the books, the Father is the true author and not me. I, Jesus and or David am sitting on the right side of God the Father as He writes these books.

Now if you have read the previous books, you should know what is coming next. We talk about this in the chapter called, “The Son of perdition “revealed””. Do you know what is the footstool of God?

Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? (Isaiah 66:1)

Remember that the earth is Satan’s kingdom? Remember how we showed that man is Satan? This includes all. Man, woman, or child being male or female. We all have Satan in our bellies. We all eat dirt all the days of our lives. From the time we are born. Yes, you are starting to understand that man is the enemy of God. Man wants to do things his own way and still obtain the perfection our Father offers. Our perfect Father’s ways are the only way to eternal life and no matter how hard man tries to obtain this; our Father will not allow it.



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

The only way to get Satan and or the demons to leave us alone is by reading and or listening to the scriptures all the time as I have done for the last several years. You start with listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Starting with the first chapter of Genesis and going through the book of Revelation. When you finish, you start over. You do this until the scriptures are constantly revolving inside your conscience. I want to give you just one example of how the scriptures show us that is exactly what Jesus does and or I do.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him. (Matthew 4:1-11)

Can you hear how Jesus, or I reply with every temptation Satan throws at him or me, is knocked down with the scriptures. Because this is what is being shown here. Yes, I went through these same things when I did this fast, and I strongly suggest you reading the fourth book, Jesus is here, if you want to understand how this happened to me better. But now you should also be understanding how the demons know the scriptures but tremble.

Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. (James 2:17-19)

Anyone can know the bible like the back of his or her hand, but if you do not listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God, than you know nothing.

This is also how you force Satan that is inside you, to worship God. Throughout these books, I have shown you all that you are your own personal house of God. When you meditate on the scriptures all the time, you are forcing him to worship God with you. To show this in the scriptures we need to listen to the words of Jesus in the book of John.

Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. (John 4:20-22)

Yes, this conversation Jesus is having with this woman is something that happened to me in real time. There is a chapter in the last book,

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

At midnight I will rise, called, The woman that has had five husbands. The part I am drawing attention is when Jesus said Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. I encourage you to read or listen to all John 4. I will tell you this though, Jesus is alone when this conversation with this woman took place, so what is he talking about when he states that we know what we worship? This is Jesus forcing the Satan part that is within him, to worship God the Father. Remember that Satan or the son of perdition dwells in the temple of God.

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.  
(2 Thessalonians 2:1-4)

There are still days that some people will tell me that I should get a house, get a local job, get a woman, etc. I always come back with the scriptures as to why I will not and or cannot. To put it bluntly, I am not giving up everything or anything that I have accomplished with our Father, for the ways of this world. There is nothing or any amount of money that I would take here on earth that would be worth giving up what I will be rewarded with when I am done here. These last 12 plus years have not been fun for me, but I wouldn't change them if I could. I look forward to all my rewards when I am done here.

Now to bring this chapter to a close. I want to talk about those that refuse to listen to Moses and what happened to them.

He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. (Hebrews 10:28-31)

At the mouth of two witnesses, or three witnesses, shall he that is worthy of death be put to death; but at the mouth of one witness he shall not be put to death. The hands of the witnesses shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterward the hands of all the people. So thou shalt put the evil away from among you. (Deuteronomy 17:6=7)

But the soul that doeth ought presumptuously, whether he be born in the land, or a stranger, the same reproacheth the Lord; and that soul shall be cut off from among his people. Because he hath despised the word of the Lord, and hath broken his commandment, that soul shall utterly be cut off; his iniquity shall be upon him. (Numbers 15:30-31)

I am the Lord your God, which brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, that ye should not be their bondmen; and I have broken the bands of your yoke, and made you go upright. But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all these commandments; And if ye shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my

commandments, but that ye break my covenant: I also will do this unto you; I will even appoint over you terror, consumption, and the burning ague, that shall consume the eyes, and cause sorrow of heart: and ye shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you. And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. And I will break the pride of your power; and I will make your heaven as iron, and your earth as brass: And your strength shall be spent in vain: for your land shall not yield her increase, neither shall the trees of the land yield their fruits. And if ye walk contrary unto me, and will not hearken unto me; I will bring seven times more plagues upon you according to your sins. I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, and destroy your cattle, and make you few in number; and your high ways shall be desolate. And if ye will not be reformed by me by these things, but will walk contrary unto me; Then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times for your sins. And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you; and ye shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy. And when I have broken the staff of your bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight: and ye shall eat, and not be satisfied. And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your

sins. And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcasses upon the carcasses of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you. (Leviticus 26:13=30)

This is just a few times in which we can hear what happened and will happen to those that despise Moses and all that he has to say. I am placing at the end of this chapter for now it is up to you as to whether or not you will do as Moses said. Don't think for a second that our Father will say it is okay that you have chosen not to believe in Him and all that He has said. If you are going to rise from the dead or wake out of sleep, you must take the vail off of your heart, humble yourself and hear Moses and the prophets. This can be done reading these books as well for these books will give you an understanding quicker than you seeking it out in the scriptures now.

But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which vail is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord. (2 Corinthians 3:14-18)

# RENEWING YOUR MIND

This is going to be a fun chapter for me because we are going to be showing you how I have transformed my mind. This is also when I will be signifying the way into the holiest of all.

The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: (Hebrews 9:8)

Not only am I going to signify the way into the holiest, but I am also going to flat out be telling you how I have entered into the holiest and at the same time, will be showing you how to put on the armor of God.

The first thing I want to show is that it is God the Father in which gives us an understanding. But let me remind you all, He will only give you this understanding if you truly want to understand Him, all of His ways, and the King James Version of the Bible.

And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:7)

Yes, I give you all an understanding through these books, but I couldn't understand Him as well as I do if He wouldn't have helped me understand Him. And if you are now reading at least your 2<sup>nd</sup> book of the six, the Father is the one truly giving you an understanding. And it will be because you took the initiative, and showed Him that you were willing to learn about Him and His ways.

First thing we need to be paying attention to is how we are being told that God shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. Remember everybody on the planet makes up the one Son of God. Everything is so much simpler to understand if we can just truly keep this in mind. This does not matter on the race, color, nationalism, size, or shape of a person. Everybody is a servant and or vessel of god as shown in previous books. Yes, even the leaders of certain countries that are at war right now.

Now to get started on this, I want to remind everyone that when our Father first called me to the Bible in 2011, and I read the King James Version for the first time. I heard a few things shown in previous books, that made me feel that the Bible was talking about our lives, more importantly, my life. I truly believe that this is the first step in renewing your mind. Realizing that the Bible is one long letter of instructions as to how we are to live our lives today. Not a history book.

Then in the later part of 2015 is when our Father told me to start listening to the Bible. At that time, I was living in an apartment and had unlimited internet. He kept putting it on my conscience of how faith comes by hearing the word of God.

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:17)

So, I started listening to the King James Version of the Bible on BibleGateway.com. When I got to the book of Ezekiel, I heard something that almost made the hair on the back of my neck stand up. This is all explained in the fourth book, so I will not go into detail on that again. But because of this, I was now addicted to listening to the Bible. Then I started hearing the engrafted word in which led me out into the wilderness to die. This was me willingly laying down my life as explained in the third and fourth books. Then after this, I was sent to my mom's for 3 weeks to get it through my thick skull, that it was a spiritual death and not a physical one.



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

By the time these three weeks were up, I probably listened to the complete Bible two or three times. Not all while I was at my mom's but since I had started listening instead of reading. Then I was in South Dakota fasting for 40 days and nights, I had listened to it but did not get fed while I was there. Then I got in the truck and that is when things really took off. It took me a couple of weeks before I could order the Bible on CDs, so that I could listen to while I drove. But once I got the first Bible, on CDs. I would just start at the beginning of Genesis and go all the way through the book of Revelation. Then I would just start over and listen to it again, I will let you do the math, but it took me between 3-4 weeks to listen to the Bible one complete time. Then I would go again. I did this for several years. I gave up on trying to figure out how many times all in all I have listen to the Bible for I never counted. I would just listen to it over and over again. I am certain though that I have listened to the complete Bible more than 50 times. Knowing that our Father would show me a little more each time I listened to it.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. (Isaiah 28:9-13)

Notice how our Father tells us that precept must be upon precept? This is how He teaches us. But then He mentions the same thing for

those that fall backward and are broken. When He starts teaching us in this way, many start thinking that they need to find Him somewhere other than the King James Version of the Bible and seek Him elsewhere. That is those that fall backward. Because when they are venturing elsewhere, they are seeking some other spirit rather than Him.

Unbeknownst to me, this was me starting to renew my mind. Before any of this happened, I was amongst the walking dead. But over the years of me listening to the Bible and always thinking about what I was hearing, I was starting renew my mind. By keeping my mind on things from above and not of the things of the earth.

But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace. (James 3:17-18)

This is where a lot of people do not understand that the wisdom from above, is within you. It is easy to know this if we realize that the Bible is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today and not a book of the past.

For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. (Deuteronomy 30:12-14)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Then we need to remember that the kingdom of God is not far away either, but it is within you.

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.  
(Luke 17:20-21)

You must allow yourself to hear all the word of God. That is when all the dots start to come together, and the King James Version of the bible starts to make sense. Then we start to understand what we are hearing when we listen to this.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:  
(Philippians 3:20)

Now we are going to be listening to when we are told all scripture is inspired by God but we will be approaching it from a different angle than in the first chapter.

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

When you think of God, you think of Him being in heaven, right? Well, when we start to realize that it is God the Father Himself that has inspired all the scriptures to be written, we start to think of the scriptures to be written by God Himself. I will state this again, only the King James Version of the Bible and not any bible that has been published.

Now knowing this, we can easily understand how we find Jesus in the scriptures as he tells us.

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.  
(John 5:39)

It was the second book in which I started showing you all that everybody is Jesus. Remember how we are told that our conversations are in heaven were we look for the saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ? I started to understand this after listening to the Bible repeatedly for over 2 years. Then, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here was published, and I continued listening to the bible and still do.

Now start putting this together, we are to search the scriptures that speak of Jesus, but at the same time, realize that we are being told that our conversations are in heaven. The God of heaven inspired all scriptures. When we truly think about it, we start to understand that the scriptures are heavenly. There is the humongous secret. The more time we spend in the scriptures, the more time we spend in heaven. But this is all of the scriptures, not bits and pieces. Not chasing knowledge of God, the Father in any other way than the scriptures. It is by listening to, and living by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. But these scriptures must be from the Kind James Version of the Bible. Any bible published after that has been written by Satan and or man so lead you away from the truth.

This is where I reflect to a chapter called Heavenly Conversations in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. This is when I started to realize it was like we are ease dropping on what is being said in heaven and not here on earth. Through several of the books, we have done mind experiments as to say that we are in heaven looking down upon the earth. Not knowing what was beginning to happen to me spiritually and physically.

Once I started to listen to the scriptures repeatedly, then our Father started to translate me in the Kingdom of His Son.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness,  
and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear  
Son: (Colossians 1:13)

This translation did not happen immediately, nor did it come quickly. It did not come by observation either. It slowly came as I continued to seek our Father and all that He has to say in the King James Version of the Bible. And the more I sought Him, the more that He would show me. The more I listened, the more I started to understand Him and what He is doing.

By the time the third book came about, I had listened to the Bible, I am guessing over 30 or 40 times. Then He told me to make my name known, so I wrote Jesus Christ in the flesh. Quickly, as explained in that book. Well before this, I started meditating on the scriptures all the time. If I wasn't listening to the Bible, it was like it was like the scriptures were and are continuously playing in my mind. This is a good thing as we are told.

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. For the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish. (Psalm 1:1-6)

Then after the third book was published, our Father sent me to Maui, Hi. This is when I seen the spiritual flood that covers the earth today. Then once I got back from that trip, I started listening to the

Bible while I was driving as always. But then the Father started to put it on my conscience to stop listening to the Bible and start listening to the news.

This was about a month or so after the trip, then they started talking about the virus that was unknown to man. Yes, the Covid-19, and I started listening to the news as much as I listened to the Bible. I listened to the news every day for about a year or so. When this first started, it bothered me for I felt like I should be listening to the Bible. But at the same time, as I was listening to the news, I could relate a lot of what I was hearing, to the scriptures. Then I started to hear certain words that would take me to a specific verse. For instance, when I heard them say we were fighting an invisible enemy, I knew right away that man was fighting, God.

Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness,  
and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear  
Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood,  
even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of  
the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:  
(Colossians 1:13-15)

Yes, the Covid-19, economic turmoil, and racial tensions that ravaged through the world, were all started by our Father and not man. These too, was the first three of the contractions of our Mother being in labor. This is all explained in detail in the fourth book, Jesus is here.

I am not sure of how many times I had listened to the Bible when this all started, but because I had listened to it so many times, I could not get the scriptures out of my mind. Yes, this is how you put on the armor of God. You listen to the Bible over and over and over. You listen to it so many times that the scriptures from Genesis through Revelation is all you think about. I have actually been telling you all that in all but the first book. I have been telling you all that I listen to the Bible all the time. In each book since the second one, Behold

a greater than Jonas is here, I have shown the progression of how my times I have listened to it.

Now I must give a fair warning here. If you do decide to listen the King James Version of the Bible, it is extremely powerful. I use CDs in my truck. Before I got a decent portable CD player, I used my data on my phone linked up to my stereo. The first few times I listened to it, was on my laptop via unlimited internet. Using any of these methods do work and yes, it can and probably will be addictive as it is for me.

After my baptism of the Holy Ghost in March of 2016, I went on the 40 day fast as explained in the third and fourth books. When was at my brother's place, I would listen to the Bible when we were not at work. My brother decided he was going to try this himself. He made it through the first three or four books of the Bible. Then his wife and him went to the grocery store one weekend afternoon. When they got back, my brother started yelling at me because he was looking for the ingredients in food to see if it contained pork. He has been a pork lover all his life, and still is. He was yelling at me because he could not figure out why he started to feel bad about eating pork. At the time, I didn't understand how this was working, I just thought he was hearing the truth. For quite some time now though, I know that there is a hidden power behind listening to the Bible, rather than reading it. That is how powerful it is when you listen to the Bible. So, be ready for changes to take hold of your life. And if you start feel as if you need to make changes, make them, and do not hesitate. Let me show you why.

For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant,

wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. (Hebrews 10:26-31)

Now I am going to explain how I have transformed my mind so that anybody that sees me, can see it by my works, and by my appearance. When all this started back in 2011, my favorite color was red. Up until about 5 years ago, I pretty much kept that preference. Then I started to favor blue. To me, it was not that big of a deal. You know, like just personal items that I keep in the truck. Like my coffee cup that I use to drink coffee out of in the mornings. Which is different from the coffee mug I use while I drive. We will be talking about that shortly.

I also should tell you now, that the fringes that I wear, are blue and white. These are the fringes we are to make for ourselves and wear them on the four corners of our garments. These are to remind us that we will do all that our Father commands of us, when we look the upon them. They also serve as the doors on the spiritual tent that is always around us. I have been wearing these for years. This is explained in the chapter called Building Your House On the Rock in the fourth book. Jesus is Here

I have also told you all that I wear two shirts. One being an undershirt with any overshirt. I have been this way since I was a teenager. About four years ago or so, I started to look for blue muscle shirts for my undershirt. At this time, I was not being to picky on the overshirt. All that mattered to me was that it had two pockets. I used to be able to pick up these muscle shirts at Walmart. They came in a five pack with five different shades of blue. They were not made with great quality, but they were blue. Then it got to the point that I could not find these packs anymore. All I could find was six packs that would have one or two blue muscle shirts in it. There was no way that I was going to buy three packs so that I could have five or six



undershirts. So, some days I would be forced to wear an undershirt that wasn't blue. I felt very uncomfortable.

After searching several stores throughout the country, I finally got fed up with not being able to find what I was looking for. Then about a year and a half ago, I went online and found what I was looking for. I ordered five of these blue and white muscle shirts. I had them shipped to my daughters place because as I have told you all, I do not have a home. As shown in previous books, this is how I have nowhere to lay my head.

When I finally got these shirts, I got rid of the others. I was still not that picky about my overshirts at this time. I would guess that three of my overshirts were blue. Then after wearing them for about a week, I noticed something. I kept looking at my undershirt thinking that this color scheme looks very familiar. Then it dawned on me, I still have at least one copy of each book that we have written in the truck with me. I pulled out *Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening*, and held it on my belly over my undershirt. That was it, the color scheme of the shirt matched the cover of the book. I freaked out, I called my daughter, my son, and a few others thinking that this was the Father telling me that this means it has come full circle. Because I am always getting ahead of His schedule. I was just in total awe.

Then the incident happened that I told you all about in the first chapter of this book and in *At Midnight I Will Rise*. I lost that job I had when this happened. Then I worked a couple of jobs locally while I was taking my life back and getting my health back to an acceptable level. Wearing these undershirts while I worked. Unfortunately, both jobs worked around grease and oil, so I got a couple of stains on a few of them.

Then when I decided that I was going to take my life back, I started calling companies to get a over the road job. I had called several including the company that I was working for when the incident happened because they had told me once I got recertified, to call them. They wanted me to work for three years before they would take me back. Then the other companies that I applied at told me that they wanted me to wait three years to get this off my record.

Then one day I got a call from the company that I am with now. Naturally, I was thinking they were going to tell me the same thing. So, after filing out an over the phone application, I bluntly told them of the incident and asked them right away if they would still consider me. Obviously, they told me that they would be glad to have me come aboard. I told them that I needed to give the company that I was working for a 2-week notice. He told me that he would rather me be there on the upcoming Monday. This was Wednesday and because I know how our Father does things, I thought the Father wants me out of the place I was staying, now. I went into work that afternoon and told my boss that I would not be there Monday for our Father was sending me back out on the road.

When I got to this company, I was given a choice of which truck I wanted out of four. There was two blue, one being brand new, and one being used. Two being of some kind of gray color. I chose the brand new blue one. Then they pulled it into the shop and put white lettering on it. So, as it is, The truck I drive is blue with white lettering. The trailers that I pull are white with blue on them. Then I went to the local Walmart to get the things that I needed for the truck for I had left a lot of my stuff in the other truck when the incident happened. I picked up a new coffee mug to use while I am driving. Yes, it is blue and white. If you watch my videos on my YouTube channel, THEJENKS1000, you might see me drink out of it once and a while.

Then about 3 months after I got this job, I got through my daughters house with a little extra time. I went to a store that had nicer clothes so that I could finally get blue overshirts. But I wanted long sleeve, double pocketed shirts that had snaps instead of buttons. You can probably guess of what kind of store I had to go to find these. I was done caring about the cost and yes, I paid close to \$40 per shirt. But I found five blue and white shirts that I like. Two of them have some black stripes with the blue and white, but I found what I wanted.

About two months ago, maybe not quite that long. Well, it was during the time that our Father was convincing me to write another book. He told me to start thinking about everything that I wear and what I am driving. It took me a couple of days to put it together. I

mean I knew that everything that I was wearing was blue and white, except my cowboy boots and my socks. I just recently ordered a blue belt also. My sleep clothes are also blue and white. And I was just glad to be driving a blue truck. But then He reminded me of this.

But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. So also is the resurrection of the dead. And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last

trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord. (1 Corinthians 15:35-52)

I went ahead and posted a few extra verses here so that you can grasp the whole picture that this is showing us. First of all, it starts off with how the dead are raised up? Well, this is what happened with me back in March of 2016. David, being dead, as shown in the chapter the Walking Dead in the last book, willingly gave up his life. Then it talks about the different kind of bodies. Then we hear how the resurrection of the dead is different also. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. Before this baptism, my body was a natural body. Then the spiritual body started to take place.

Then notice how we can hear that the first man is of the earth and the second is the Lord from the earth? I must admit this, just as I am writing this, our Father brought something to my attention. It was right around the beginning of March when we was going back and forth about writing this book. It was right around that time when He told me to start thinking about how everything about me is blue and white. This was right around 7 years after the baptism of the Holy

Ghost. I must quit getting ahead of His schedule. Sorry, that is just me thinking out loud.

Then we can hear how we are borne in the image of the earthly. Then we can hear how we are to bear the image of the heavenly. Let me ask you this, when you look to the heavens, what do you see? On most days, we see blue and white. Now when anyone sees me, they see blue and white. Even when it comes to what I am driving.

This makes me reconsider everything about the incident that happened in May of 2022. Remember everybody is a servant and or a vessel of God. It was the Father in which caused me to have the incident so that I would lose that job. It was the Father in which called me to tell me to come to work for this company so that I would be driving a blue and white truck. The last truck was gray. It was the Father that caused me to order these undershirts that I wear. By the way, I wear blue jeans. It was the Father that caused me to buy the five shirts that are blue and white. It was the Father that put the image of the heavenly body on me. I am bearing the image of the heavenly body. When I really think about it, it was our Father that transformed me into the kingdom of heaven.

Now I need to talk about my new website. [davidofpsalm89.com](http://davidofpsalm89.com) After the last book, *At midnight I will rise* was published, Ulink called me. They called me asking me if I was interested in promoting this book and having them create a website for me. They asked me if I have a website, and I told them that I did. I told them that I created it, but it wasn't anything fancy. The name of that site is [jesuschristintheflesh.com](http://jesuschristintheflesh.com). They looked at it and were not impressed. I told them to build me one that looks more professional. I told them that I wanted the frame to be midnight blue and the body of it to be sky blue. And that I wanted somewhere to put videos, and somewhere to make blogs. They are the ones that came up with the clouds in the sky, and all the books floating in the clouds. We will be talking more about this in the chapter, *Understanding chastisement*, but again, the blue and white. Everything about me now is blue and white.

Now we need to talk about this section of the Bible saying that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. I am living in

the kingdom of God, but I did not inherit this. Notice how it tells us that flesh and blood cannot inherit this kingdom. When I went out into the wilderness and willingly went out there to die, I gave up my flesh and blood. I gave up my life, so in turn, I inherited the kingdom of God. Remember, it was a spiritual death and not a physical one. I did not inherit this one day just because our Father said I would. I had to believe and hear Moses and the prophets. I had to believe and hear all the Bible to inherit this. You must do the same, but it will come quicker for you all because I bring this knowledge to you in these books.

This is where I must say, I have been stuck on this chapter for about a week. The Father has been putting it on my conscience of 1 Corinthians 15. Because of what I heard when He first called me to the Bible, I thought I was supposed to debunk the rapture concept. This is the concept that He used to call me to the Bible back in 2011. As shown in previous books, there is no such thing as pre, mid, or post rapture. It is a made-up word that man and their imagination has come up with so that they can hope that our Father will treat them better than others. Which will not happen. This is all explained in previous books. So, I would write a few things on showing that there is no rapture, and then delete it. I kept doing this, trying to figure out why I couldn't get anything done.

The reason I was stuck on this is because of the verse that talks about how we will be changed in a moment, in a twinkling of the eye. I know that many people think this is the rapture, but it isn't. Can you hear how right after this verse, it tells us that the corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality? That right there is plainly telling you that we are not changed physically or instantaneously. We are told that after this changing, we must do the following as just shown. That is how you begin to transform your mind.

Here is where that change comes in a moment, in a twinkling of an eye. It is you and your mind and heart. It is when you decide to take the veil off your heart. You let down your guard, and acknowledge

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

that you do not know, and you become willing to humble yourself and learn just as a little child.

And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which veil is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord. (2 Corinthians 3:13-18)

In a moment, in a twinkling of the eye, when you decide to take the veil off your heart, you will decide to start learning of the Old Testament. You will start hearing Moses and the prophets and you too, will become as a little child.

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. (Matthew 18:1-4)

As shown in previous books, and a little in this one, a little child must learn to chew, eat, talk, crawl, walk, run, etc. A little child is

eager to learn how to do things. A little child wants the elder to show them how things are done. This is how we must become. We must let our guard down, humble ourselves and show our Father that we are willing to learn of Him, His ways, and His perfection. Just as a little child does. And just as a child, this knowledge will not come over night. It will be a continued effort on your end, just as a child must go through different levels of school, you will also.

This took me several years to get to where I am at now. But as we just explained I have put on the image of the heavenly body. I am in the kingdom of heaven, and am no longer a resident of the earth. I told you all of how I seen the spiritual flood that covers this earth, that is because I have put on the spiritual body. You can see this by my works and by my appearance.

When you take this vail of your heart, you too, will start learning how everyone carries their own cross. You will start to understand how everybody has different rules, laws, judgments, ordinances, testimonies, and commandments. You will start this no matter what color, race, nationalism, size, or shape a person is. You will start to understand that they are carrying their cross to their own crucifixion just as we are told that Jesus carries his cross to his own crucifixion. You will start to understand how everybody makes up the One Son of God.

This will be the process of you starting to renew your mind. You will start to understand how man twist the scriptures around to make it sound as if our Father is mean, cruel, vindictive, or unfair. You will start to understand how most of this world does not want anything do with our Father even though it is Him, that gives each of us a chance to learn of His marvelous works. And you will start to understand why He is getting ready to bring this world to an end. And finally, you will start to understand our Father, who He is, and why He is doing what He is doing. And I am guessing that you will agree with Him, just as I do. And you too, will start to put on the image of the heavenly body, just as I have.

And you will understand what we are hearing when we listen to this.



He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

You will know His works from the time of the beginning till now, the time of the end. Just as I have shown you all in these books. But I am pretty sure that He will move you all along a lot quicker than He has me. I want to show you all just a few times of several where He tells us that once we turn back to Him, He will heal us. And it does not matter if it is in the latter days.

But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice; (For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:29-31)

And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee: And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy

fathers. And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. And the Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day. And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. (Deuteronomy 30:2-10)

For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the Lord, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. And I will be found of you, saith the Lord: and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you, saith the Lord; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive. (Jeremiah 29:11-14)

So the posts went with the letters from the king and his princes throughout all Israel and Judah, and according to the commandment of the king, saying,

Ye children of Israel, turn again unto the Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, and he will return to the remnant of you, that are escaped out of the hand of the kings of Assyria. And be not ye like your fathers, and like your brethren, which trespassed against the Lord God of their fathers, who therefore gave them up to desolation, as ye see. Now be ye not stiffnecked, as your fathers were, but yield yourselves unto the Lord, and enter into his sanctuary, which he hath sanctified for ever: and serve the Lord your God, that the fierceness of his wrath may turn away from you. For if ye turn again unto the Lord, your brethren and your children shall find compassion before them that lead them captive, so that they shall come again into this land: for the Lord your God is gracious and merciful, and will not turn away his face from you, if ye return unto him. (2 Chronicles 30:6-9)

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Corinthians 6:16-18)

That is just a few of several times when we can hear our Father tell us that when we turn back to Him, He will return to us and or will receive us. But you must make that change in your heart, let your guard down, humble yourself and except that He is much wiser than any of us. And you are now ready to start seeking Him with all your heart, soul, mind, and strength. And then you will do as I have done.

Now you should be able to understand why we are told that Jesus is an example for us.

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: (1 Peter 2:21)

I thought that I had finished this chapter a week or so ago, but as I am driving today, our Father brought something to my attention. Trough all of these books that I have written, there are a few mistakes. And instead of me stressing on fixing these mistakes, I tend to leave them alone and just move on. Even on some of my YouTube videos, I get some things wrong. I am not perfect and do not think I should be. But at the same time, I am very thorough on using the scriptures to show the way that I am thinking. When you all read these books, and or watch the lessons I give on my channel, THEJENKS1000,, you should be encouraged to seek the scriptures as well. When you combine all the listening to the scriptures, seeking the truth in the scriptures, you slowly start to meditate on the scriptures all the time. When this becomes a constant thing that is happening, you too will start to renew your mind. You will be starting to have you conscience in the heavenly places, or in the scriptures. And that is how you will be caught up in the clouds with me.

For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. (1 Thessalonians 4:15-18)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

My conscience is constantly in the scriptures, or in heaven. My conscience is in the clouds, if you will, all the time and that is why when you see me now, you see the same colors of the heavens. But there is a catch, if you meditate on the scriptures other than the King James Version of the Bible, you are meditating on man or Satan and his doctrine and how he has changed the truth. And you will not renew your mind as to think about our Father and all that He has said, saying, and will say. And all that He had done, doing, and will do. This too, is how one makes their bed in hell. Remember how I told you that I would tell you ascend into heaven or bed in hell. But if you get to a point that you are meditating on the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible, all of the time, you too, will start to evolve into the kingdom of heaven as I have, by renewing your mind.

Now I have shown you all how my conscience is always in the scriptures. I have shown you all how I have put on the appearance of heavenly places. I have shown you who the King of all kings is. Now let us think about the scripture that teach that Jesus is sitting on the right side of God.

Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him. (1 Peter3:22)

Now you can physically see me sitting on the right side of God the Father. Not because I died and ascended into heaven but because I chose to seek our Father with all my heart, soul, and mind. And because I choose to keep Him and the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible on my conscience all the time.



# BIRTHDAYS AND HOLIDAYS

This is a chapter in which we touched on in the last chapter. We have also covered this chapter in previous books. But this time we are going to be looking at it from a little different perspective. It will still have the same concept, but brings new light as to why some will want to stop celebrating these days. We are doing this because my knowledge of our Father continues to grow every day. And I feel that you should be able to grow as I grow. The first thing that I want to show is that we are not to add or diminish from the word of God.

Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

Thou shalt not do so unto the Lord thy God: for every abomination to the Lord, which he hateth, have they done unto their gods; for even their sons and their daughters they have burnt in the fire to their gods. (Deuteronomy 12:31)

Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper withersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:7)

Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper withersoever thou goest. (Revelation 22:18-19)

There are more spots in which imply the same thing we are being told here, but I think we all can agree that we are not to add or take away anything to what the Bible commands of us. By celebrating these days, you are adding to the word of God. You are spiritually adding something to what our perfect Father said we needed. He did not say that we needed to celebrate birthdays, nor any man-made holidays that man celebrates. If perfection, our Father, would have thought we needed these days, He would have said so.

To start this out, we are going to be looking at three birthdays that are talked about in the Bible. We will be looking at a king of the Old Testament, then will be looking at a king of the New Testament, and then the birth of Jesus. Let us begin. I suggest that if you want to learn of the Holy Days in which we are commanded to observe, then read the previous chapter or listen to what is being said in Leviticus 23. And as you do this, you will not here that we are not commanded to celebrate birthdays.

And it came to pass the third day, which was Pharaoh's birthday, that he made a feast unto all his servants: and he lifted up the head of the chief butler and of the chief baker among his servants. And he restored the chief butler unto his butlership again; and he gave the cup into Pharaoh's hand: (Genesis 40:20-21)

This is Pharaoh's birthday in which is being spoken of here. Can you hear what Pharaoh did on his birthday? He made a feast for all his servants. We do not hear of anyone wishing him a happy birthday. We do not hear of anyone getting him gifts or anything of the sort. We don't hear of others treating him better on his birthday than any other



DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

day. We can only hear that he made dinner for all his servants. He did for other on his birthday. We cannot hear of other doing for him.

Now that we brought up the thought of anyone giving him gifts, we must listen to a few spots in which we can hear that our Father hates us receiving gift. And what is done on birthdays?

He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house; but he that hateth gifts shall live. (Proverbs 15:27)

And thou shalt take no gift: for the gift blindeth the wise, and perverteth the words of the righteous. (Exodus 23:8)

A wicked man taketh a gift out of the bosom to pervert the ways of judgment. (Proverbs 17:23)

Thou shalt not wrest judgment; thou shalt not respect persons, neither take a gift: for a gift doth blind the eyes of the wise, and pervert the words of the righteous. (Deuteronomy 16:19)

This is just a few of the times we can hear our Father say that He does not want us to receive gifts from man. That is because it takes our eyes off Him, and man tends to look to man for their reward. Then we need to remember what is inside of man. Right now, we are only focusing of birthdays, but you can know that this hold true for any holiday as well.

Now we need to listen to when we hear about king Harold, and what he did on his birthday.

But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod. Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask. And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John

Baptist's head in a charger. And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her. And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother. (Matthew 14:6-11)

Yes, Herod's daughter dance for him, but notice how there is an oat to give her whatsoever she would ask. Note once again that there is no gift given to him. Then she asked for the head of John Baptist's head in a charger because her mother had instructed her to do so Then notice how Herod was sorry but did what he was asked of for the oaths sake. He didn't want to do but he did it for his for his daughter on his birthday. Our birthdays are not about us being glorified. They are not for us to be treated better on this one day as if to say that we should be loved more on this day. If we listen to the scriptures, we can hear that we should be doing for others on our birthday.

Now we are going to look at the birth of Christ, but by now we all should know that Jesus was not here before now. So, we should also be aware that we are hearing conversations being held in heaven. With that in mind, let us listen to when we can hear about this in the scriptures.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the

prophet, And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense and myrrh. (Matthew 2:1-11)

The first thing we need to pay attention to is how these wise men seen the star to the east. When was the last time you knew of a star that is constantly in the east? Using the sun for an example, it rises in the east and goes down in the west. Then when you go down a little further in this, you can hear how the star went before these wise men and stood over where the young child was. When was the last time you heard of a star moving in this fashion? Remember how we have been showing you all in several of the books, everybody makes up the one Son of God, or Jesus. This conversation is being held in heaven. This star shines on the earth. Not confirmed by our Father, but I do believe that this star, is the sun.

Now we need to bring something up about those that worship the sun to the east. What we are going to be showing is something that is talking about all of those that worship Jesus instead of our Father. When we are listening to everything in the scriptures we can connect these dots. I am going to place the entire chapter of Ezekiel 8 because

I think it is important to hear of all the abominations in this chapter. It will talk about the sun in verses 16-17.

And it came to pass in the sixth year, in the sixth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I sat in mine house, and the elders of Judah sat before me, that the hand of the Lord God fell there upon me. Then I beheld, and lo a likeness as the appearance of fire: from the appearance of his loins even downward, fire; and from his loins even upward, as the appearance of brightness, as the colour of amber. And he put forth the form of an hand, and took me by a lock of mine head; and the spirit lifted me up between the earth and the heaven, and brought me in the visions of God to Jerusalem, to the door of the inner gate that looketh toward the north; where was the seat of the image of jealousy, which provoketh to jealousy. And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel was there, according to the vision that I saw in the plain. Then said he unto me, Son of man, lift up thine eyes now the way toward the north. So I lifted up mine eyes the way toward the north, and behold northward at the gate of the altar this image of jealousy in the entry. He said furthermore unto me, Son of man, seest thou what they do? even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here, that I should go far off from my sanctuary? but turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations. And he brought me to the door of the court; and when I looked, behold a hole in the wall. Then said he unto me, Son of man, dig now in the wall: and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. And he said unto me, Go in, and behold the wicked abominations that they do here. So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house

of Israel, portrayed upon the wall round about. And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up. Then said he unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say, the Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth. He said also unto me, Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations that they do. Then he brought me to the door of the gate of the Lord's house which was toward the north; and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz. Then said he unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations than these. And he brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east. Then he said unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, lo, they put the branch to their nose. Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them. (Ezekiel 8:1-18)

That sun talked about in verses 16 and 17, is the star in the east that stood where the young child was. Now let us talk about how these wise men brought him gifts, gold, and frankincense and myrrh. In the

scriptures, this child is just born. What would an infant child do with any of these things other than harm himself. I have shown in previous books that this stuff would be for the parents to help raise the child.

If you have made it this far into this book, you are aware that everybody in part of the One Son of God, so why should we not love everybody equally everyday just as our Father loves us all equally? If everybody is Jesus, then every day of the year is his birthday, right? Why does man think that they should be loved more on certain days of the year. I am grateful that my Father does not choose and pick certain days that He loves me more than others. When I wake, I know that He loves me just as much as he did yesterday. And the same for you, and He is not going to love either of us more tomorrow.

Now I want to talk about some of the manmade holidays in which our Father never commanded. Then we are going to also talk about somedays that are not recognized as holidays but are celebrated every year. First thing we need to think about is the Holidays that we covered in the last chapter. I am not going to post those again, but if your interested in looking at those, it is in Leviticus 23, or you can look back in the last chapter to refresh your mind. But I will assure you that none of these holidays that man celebrates are listed in these Holy days. Yes, man teaches that some of these days are about the Bible, but they are not.

The first day we are going to look at is christmas. I am not capitalizing as everybody thinks it should be. There is no record of the birthday of Jesus in the Bible. Why? Because everybody is Jesus, so that means every day is his birthday. Now as far as for me being the chosen one, only a few people on this planet know my birthday and they have been instructed to not make it public. I do not and will not celebrate my birthday nor anyone else's. There are several countries that celebrate christmas but if we listen to all that our Father has said in the scriptures, we can know that He does not think to highly of those that do.

Hear ye the word which the Lord speaketh unto you, O house of Israel: Thus saith the Lord, Learn

not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not. They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not: they must needs be borne, because they cannot go. Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also is it in them to do good. (Jeremiah 10:1-5)

Once again, this just illustrates on how much the Bible is about our lives today and not a book of the past. There is no way anyone can tell me that this is not about christmas. That is the only time of the year that people put trees up, fasten them to the wall, and decorate them with gold and silver.

Now I going to bring something up, when you talk to some people about this, they will tell you that it is a pagan holiday or something like that. When the Father first called me to the Bible, I too, started to look at it as something that the pagans did. Then I realized that the pagans are not talked about in the Bible. If you doubt what I am saying, google where is the pagans talked about in the scriptures. So, this is a way that man justifies himself on continuing to celebrate this day thinking that they are not a pagan, or whatever. Or better said, if you search out what the pagans did by some other means than the King James Version of the Bible, you are not seeking every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. You are seeking out what man or Satan has to say about it. The plain truth is our Father never told us to celebrate this day. He is perfect in everything that He has said, saying, and will say. In everything that He has done, doing, and will do. So, why is it that so many feel the need to do something other than what perfection tells we need to become perfect?

Now I guess there are some that celebrate Hannukah. I will say that this is also a day or time that man has added to this perfection

that comes from our Father. I had to google this myself, and I guess people celebrate this because they think Jesus celebrated it in the Bible. Well I am here to say, no he did not in the scriptures and no he does not today. But we are going to the one spot in the Bible that people are trying to say that Jesus celebrated this day. You will hear for yourselves that he did not.

No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father. There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him? Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind? And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: (John 10:18-27)

The two verses that they use to try and justify celebrating this are 22 and 23. And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch. I went ahead and posted verses around those two verses above so that you can hear that there is no mention of Jesus celebrating anything. Just because he was there at this time, does not mean that he was automatically celebrating anything. Let me give you an example. I by no means add anything to the scriptures, I won't even acknowledge these manmade holidays when confronted by someone.



## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Let me explain. I drive a truck across the country. At christmas time, there are decorations and such everywhere. When I go into an truck stop to get something that I need and they are completely decked out for the season, does that mean because I walked into this truck stop, I am now celebrating this because they are? No, and in fact, when someone tries to wish me a merry christmas, I tell that I have nothing to do with this day and I will tell them that it goes against the word of God. We hear the same thing above, well not as far as I go, but just because we hear that Jesus is somewhere at this particular time, does not mean that he is celebrating.

Now we need to listen to an area in the book or Revelation that talks about people that celebrate christmas, but in a different manor.

And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write;  
These things saith he which hath the sharp sword  
with two edges; I know thy works, and where thou  
dwest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest  
fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in  
those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr,  
who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.  
But I have a few things against thee, because thou  
hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam,  
who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the  
children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols,  
and to commit fornication. So hast thou also them  
that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which  
thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee  
quickly, and will fight against them with the sword  
of my mouth. (Revelation 2:12-16)

I am only posting one time of two that we can hear this talk about the Nicolaitanes. Now we are going to look on E-sword, and online Bible concordance so that we can see the definition of the Nicolaitanes.

G3531 Νικολαίτης Nikolaitēs nik-ol-ah-ee'-  
tace From G3532; a Nicolaite, that is, adherent of  
Nicolaus: - Nicolaitane.

Can you hear how this is adherent of Nicolaus. Who is the fictional character that tell their children comes at this time of the year? Santa Clause, of course. Traditionally, where does Santa Clause come from? St. Nicolaus. We can clearly hear how this is hated.

Then we need to think about all the lying that goes in this season. Including myself, years ago, I use to tell my children not to lie. But before our Father called me to the Bible in 2011, I used to celebrate all these days as well. Until I realized that He never commanded it and I immediately stopped as explained in previous books. But I know many people tell their children that it is wrong to lie, correct? But who does all the lying in this season, and others? You are actually teaching your children to lie when you do this. So, you can know this, it is your own fault when they lie for you are the one that taught them to do such.

Now we are going to talk about easter. Yes, this is supposed to be the holiday that symbolizes the death and resurrection of Jesus and or the Passover. Now this day does have a connection with me, and we will talk about that in a few minutes. No, I do not celebrate this day, but let us just think about a few things that don't line up with the crucifixion of Jesus. In the scriptures, Jesus was crucified just before the Sabbath day started. Now I am not going to go back into how to define when the day begins and when the true Sabbath is, as I did in the first book, but we can know that the sabbath starts on Friday as the light from the day ends. The sabbath starts on Friday evening and goes until Saturday evening, when the light from the day ends. Now let us listen to when we can hear that Jesus was going to rise again after 3 days.

Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice,  
yielded up the ghost. And, behold, the veil of the  
temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom;  
and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; And the

graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God. And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him: Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedees children. When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre. Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can. So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch. (Matthew 27:50-66)

I went ahead and showed from the time he is crucified until we can hear them say they are going to protect the supulchre for three days. Now how is easter celebrated? Friday is Good Friday and Sunday is easter. That is only two days, not three. That is the first flag in telling us that there is something wrong with celebrating this day other than our Father never commanded it. There are other spots that talk about Jesus saying he will rise after three days but now I want to focus on when we are told that the Son of man will be in the belly of the earth for three days and three nights.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

Yes, this is where I am connected to the tradition of man and easter. I have illustrated this in other books, starting with the third. And am going to talk about it again. I had what man calls, a car accident on March 28<sup>th</sup>, Good Friday of 1986. I was in a coma for three days and three nights. I woke up out of the coma on Monday morning. If you count the days, Friday afternoon, Friday night, Saturday afternoon, Saturday night, Sunday afternoon, Sunday night. Then I came out of this coma on Monday morning.

Beings how we can know that Jesus wasn't here in the past, we should be wondering how this day ever came about in the first place. Yes, I know that some people must be sealed to think carnally and

DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

yes, they will continue to think that I was here in the past, but if we listen to this again, we know that I was not here before now.

For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

If Jesus was here in the past, the world would not be here today for you to read these books. Instead of thinking we can find out why people started celebrating these days, let us listen to a few times that we can hear our Father tell us that people would rather listen to their imagination than Him.

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. (Genesis 6:5-7)

For I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices: But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward. Since the day that your fathers came forth out of the land of Egypt unto this

day I have even sent unto you all my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them: Yet they hearkened not unto me, nor inclined their ear, but hardened their neck: they did worse than their fathers. (Jeremiah 7:22-26)

This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing. (Jeremiah 13:10)

Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the Lord. They say still unto them that despise me, The Lord hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. For who hath stood in the counsel of the Lord, and hath perceived and heard his word? who hath marked his word, and heard it? Behold, a whirlwind of the Lord is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. The anger of the Lord shall not return, until he have executed, and till he have performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But if they had stood in my counsel, and had caused my people to hear my words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings. Am I a God at hand, saith the Lord, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him?

saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord. I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; Which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the Lord. Is not my word like as a fire? saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces? Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that steal my words every one from his neighbour. Behold, I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that use their tongues, and say, He saith. Behold, I am against them that prophesy false dreams, saith the Lord, and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, saith the Lord. And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask thee, saying, What is the burden of the Lord? thou shalt then say unto them, What burden? I will even forsake you, saith the Lord. And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the Lord, I will even punish that man and his house. Thus shall ye say every one to his neighbour, and every one to his brother, What hath the Lord answered? and, What hath the Lord spoken? And the burden of the Lord shall ye mention no more: for every man's word shall be his burden; for ye have perverted the words of the living God, of the Lord of hosts our God. Thus shalt thou say to the

prophet, What hath the Lord answered thee? and, What hath the Lord spoken? But since ye say, The burden of the Lord; therefore thus saith the Lord; Because ye say this word, The burden of the Lord, and I have sent unto you, saying, Ye shall not say, The burden of the Lord; Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and your fathers, and cast you out of my presence: And I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten. (Jeremiah 23:16-40)

This is just a few of several times we can hear about people listening to their imagination. Beings how we know the Bible does not give the birth of Jesus, and we know that I rose from the dead back in 2016 as shown in the last book, we can also know that the only way people could be celebrating these days as they do is by listening to their imagination.

Let us think about thanksgiving. In the first book that the Father had me write, there was a section showing how we are to be thankful in all things. In fact, He had me break it down as to say to be thankful even if you have broken several bones and laid up in a hospital bed. He was saying to be thankful that He has not killed you and your still alive and are able to learn of the Bible and Him. Which brings us to thanksgiving. Why should we be thankful only around this time of the year? When I am asked how I am doing, I always reply, better than I deserve. Everyday that I am alive, I know that I have done wrong by our Father and deserve eternal damnation, but by the grace of God, as some would say, I am still alive and able to continue to learn. This is just another day that is not commanded by our Father. Everyday is the same to me. There is no difference to me between Monday through Sunday. The sun rises each day, and the sun sets the same. The only difference to me is the weather. Now let us listen to a few times we are told to give thanks or thanksgiving.



DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Will I eat the flesh of bulls, or drink the blood of goats? Offer unto God thanksgiving; and pay thy vows unto the most High: And call upon me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me. (Psalm 50:13-15)

But I am poor and sorrowful: let thy salvation, O God, set me up on high. I will praise the name of God with a song, and will magnify him with thanksgiving. This also shall please the Lord better than an ox or bullock that hath horns and hoofs. (Psalm 69:29-31)

And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, and declare his works with rejoicing.(Psalm 107:22)

Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:5-7)

Rejoice evermore. Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.)<sup>1</sup> Thessalonians 5:16-18)

This is just a few times in which we can hear that we are to give thanksgiving or give thanks in all things. I don't hear anything about this only being a certain time of the year. Nor is there a specific day in the holy days in which we are commanded to give thanks on. We are told to give thanksgiving all the time and not just a couple days a year.

I know that these are not listed in order but now we are going to talk about a few more holidays in which we are never commanded. Let us think about New years eve and day. Many people celebrate

these days in which if one seeks out the new year in the King James Bible, one will learn that the Passover falls on the 14<sup>th</sup> day of the new year. Then one needs to seek out when the actual year begins on God's calendar. It begins in what we call spring around here. If start in our months or March or April. The time we celebrate easter. Can you hear how twisted that is? Man has completely changed everything about the Bible.

But now think about the millions of dollars that is waisted on setting up big shows. I cannot remember what they do anymore because it has been so long, but I think there a lot of fireworks that are used. I think they do some televised event of some ball dropping or raising. Either way, millions of dollars get waisted while so many go without. Then there is the drinking thing. How much money is waisted on booze? How may people get in trouble from drinking and driving?

Then we need to mention valentines day. I had to google this to find out where this day cam from. I never knew when I used walk amongst the dead. I just knew it as a day to treat my significant other special. I guess it comes from some martyr named Valentine. I will not search into anymore because I am not going to make it seem as if this day is important. It is another day that many celebrate that our Father never told us to celebrate, or honor. I do remember that if I didn't do things just right, a argument would definitely follow. So, let me ask you this, why is there only a certain amount of days that you should make your significant other feel that they are loved? God the Father loves each of us the same every day of the year. He does not choose certain days and think, I will love this person more today than yesterday, or than I will tomorrow.

Then we have what man calls memorial day. I do not have a lot to say about this holiday other than it is a day honored by man but there is not mention of this in the holy days of God. So, by celebrating this day, you are added to perfection that our Father provides.

Then we have independence day. Our people celebrate this a birthday for the country. Another birthday celebration. This country

celebrates being separate from the rest of the world. What? How can you become one if your separate from others?

I must talk about something here. When I started working for the company I am with now, they put a decal on both sides. This decal showed a flag and said God bless America. I made them take the decals off. I told them I am for the whole world, and not just this country. God created them just the same as He did us. All 8 billion plus, are the children of God.

Then let us think about how much money is wasted on all of the fireworks. This is a time of year we can truly say that millions of dollars go up in smoke. But yet how many people go without just so other can see a few fireworks go off in the sky?

I won't say anything about labor day because I really do not know how or why this day is. I am not interested in researching it because I know it is another day that is not commanded by our Father. So, I ignore it as I do the rest.

Then we have Halloween. This is a day that people spend million of dollars on costumes to pretend they are somebody they are not. A lot of candy gets passed out, some in which has something bad in it. I remember from when I was a child, my parents would have to check the candy before we could have any. In the meantime, many go without food or shelter. And again, this is another day in which our Father never commanded.

All of these days and more are just some of the traditions and commandment of men that make the word of God of no effect.

Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. (Mark 7:13)

This is how many people continue to stay in bondage.

Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known

of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain. (Galatians 4:8-11)

I show you all this because this is something that our Father used to teach me a very valuable lesson years ago. When the Father first called me to the Bible, I spent the first five years doing everything in my power to obey Moses. This included all the Holy days. The first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening, elaborates on this. Then when I went out in the wilderness in 2016 to die, I was set free from all of that. Yes, I has quit celebrating all the man-made holidays shortly after reading the King James Version of the Bible for the first time. But for a long time after the baptism of the Holy Ghost, I would wonder if I needed to keep honoring the Holy days the first 20 nor 30 times I would listen to the Bible. Then our Father reminded me that I was set free from this because everything I do now is for the love of Him and others. There is no law in Love. But over the years, He has brought it to my attention that every one of these man-mad holidays is a way of observing days, months, times, and years.

Now we are going to touch on something that our Father brought to my attention the other day. And I will warn you now, this is not going to be easy on your ears. We have learned that the Father never commanded us to celebrate birthdays and manmade holidays. We have learned that people celebrate these days because they listen to their imagination instead of listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. We learned in a previous chapter, that Jesus is all about living by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

We have already gone over how Jesus tells us to take up our cross, deny ourselves, and follow him. Yes, this means the cross that we all spiritually carry every day. This also means that we are to learn the scriptures as he showed that he did or that I do. We showed all of this in the chapter of Obeying Jesus. Now listen to this.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) (Philippians 3:17-19)

Yes, because you refuse to listen to Christ, and or our Father, and deny yourself making your life about others, you are an enemy of the cross. Now I have taught people about how birthdays and holidays go against the Bible and the Father over the years. Never to this level of intensity, but have showed in the scriptures of the areas that talk against these days. And have often heard that they could not stop celebrating these days because their children would not understand. First and foremost, I went through this with my own children. And after a while, they will realize that you love them the same every day. And on top of that, what are we to be teaching our children?

And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. (Deuteronomy 6:6-7)

When you teach your children to celebrate these days, you are directly going against the word of God. You are teaching them that they need more than perfect. Then as shown in the previous books, this is how you cause your children to walk through fire because they will chastised to get away from these days.

Now I am going to tell you all how our Father brought this to my attention the other day, or should I say the other night. I was listening to a well-known, late night radio program while I was driving. They had a guest on that was talking about the antichrist. I have

talked about and shown this in previous books, so I tried to call in several times to share some of my knowledge on this subject. While listening to this program, I could hear how this guest was imagining a lot of stuff and not focusing on what the scriptures really say. After trying to get through on the phone 20-30 times, I gave up. I asked the Father why He didn't allow me to get through. I will be honest; I was a little upset that I couldn't get through that night because I am so eager to teach all that I am learning.

I don't get to listen to this program that much anymore for my driving schedule does not require me to drive at night all the time. But when our Father changes my schedule so that I can listen to it, I am always hoping that they will have something on that I can stomach, and maybe something that I can call in on and share some knowledge. Either way, I didn't get through that night. When I got parked, I worked on this book for a bit, and then went to bed. When I awoke, I started to listen to the three chapters of the Bible as I have told you all that I do daily. Then as I was listening, the Father started running a bunch of scriptures through my conscience all at once. Starting with what I just showed you all about being the enemies of the cross. Then with something that connected it all.

Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.  
(1 John 2:18)

And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.  
(1 John 4:3)

In previous books, I have shown that if you do not believe that everybody that has ever been on the planet and or will be on the planet, then you are an antichrist. But as the Father brought to my

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

attention, because people refuse to obey Jesus, obey the Father, and refuse to make their life about others, they are part of this antichrist. As shown in previous books, the antichrist is not one person, and is not someone that will come in the future. As you can hear, the antichrist is already here. Then as shown in previous books, many people can represent one person in the Bible, and as well one person can represent many people. Just the same as we become one with the Father, many have become one as the antichrist.

Now we need to realize that many will not give up celebrating these days because they will worry more of the repercussions that will follow with family and friends. But we must remember that I am not here to bring peace.

Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. (Matthew 10:34-38)

Then we need to remember that when we decide to hearken to the Father instead of man, we will be rewarded well when we are done in this life.

And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall

receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first. (Matthew 19:28-30)

This is where you have to make a choice as to whether you would have the appraisal of God or man.

Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. (John 12:42-44)

How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? (John 5:44)

To conclude this chapter, we need to talk about the good news. No, this is not the good news and man teaches that tells all that I changed my perfect Father and when the world ends, the perfect Father will allow you into His perfect house. This is the good news of you being alive and able to learn of our perfect Father, His perfect ways, and understand Him. This gives you the opportunity to repent. He hasn't killed you yet, so you can still repent and turn back to Him.

And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:30)

This does not only concern these man-made holidays, it also includes the touching of the unclean things.

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God



hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Corinthians 6:16-18)

Yes, if you are alive and are now just learning of our Father, you have the chance to repent. But, if you choose not to repent and turn back to Him, you will perish.

Because he considereth, and turneth away from all his transgressions that he hath committed, he shall surely live, he shall not die. Yet saith the house of Israel, The way of the Lord is not equal. O house of Israel, are not my ways equal? are not your ways unequal? Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord God. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye. (Ezekiel 18:28-32)

There were present at that season some that told him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the Galilaeans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom

the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. (Luke 13:1-5)

The choice is yours and yours only. Do not let others convince you that it is okay to do more than our perfect Father commanded. You cannot seek His perfection if you choose to continue to add, take away from His word. You cannot seek His perfection if you choose to keep eating or touching the unclean things. I want to show you that our Father is telling us that you will put difference between the clean and unclean if you want Him to guide you.

But I have said unto you, Ye shall inherit their land, and I will give it unto you to possess it, a land that floweth with milk and honey: I am the Lord your God, which have separated you from other people. Ye shall therefore put difference between clean beasts and unclean, and between unclean fowls and clean: and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast, or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have separated from you as unclean. And ye shall be holy unto me: for I the Lord am holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be mine. (Leviticus 20:24-26)

And always remember if you are trying to please others, you are not serving Christ.

For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. (Galatian1:10)

Now there are some that may think that it is to late. No, if you are still alive, it is not to late. Let us listen to a parable that explains this.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house, Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen. (Matthew 20:1-16)

DAVID JENKINS

Yes, I have been doing to for many years, and the end of all things is at hand. But it is not the end yet. So, if you all repent and start seeking our perfect with all of your heart, soul, mind and strength, you will receiver that same rewards. It is not too late. But if you do not repent and turn back to the Father, you will parish. These men that were taking in the last hour got paid the same. But if they would not have gone into the vineyard, they would not have got paid anything. You and you only can make this choice.

# HEARING OUR FATHER'S VOICE

This is a chapter that it took some time for our Father to convince me to do. This is where many are going to learn a lot of how I have been learning obedience over the last several years. This is where we truly realize that everybody on the planet, regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape is part of the one Son of God. We start to realize that everything does happen for a reason. We realize that there is no such thing as a coincidence, or luck, neither bad nor good. We realize that we need to be paying attention to everything that is always happening around us, no matter what you are doing.

Before we get start diving into this chapter, we need to give a warning. This is why I was and am still hesitant on writing this chapter. When this all started for me, I started be on the Holy Mountain that we are told about. Being on this Holy Mountain is what has enabled me to be able to hear our Father's voice. This is one of main reasons I have never told you all what I am about to tell you of now. If you are not supposed to be on this mountain, you will be thrust through. Let us listen to when we are told about this.

Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:) But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear: For our God is a consuming fire. (Hebrew 12:15-28)

This is why I am reluctant to do this chapter, if and when you start hearing His voice, do not turn from it. It has everything to do with understanding that everybody is a servant and or vessel of God. And

the only way you will hear Him is by believing that that Father is truly perfect in everything that He has ever done, doing, and will do. Believing that everything that He has ever said, saying, and saying is perfect and will lead you in the right direction. That direction might not seem right at the moment, but it is also about trusting Him to get you to where He needs you to be. If and when you start hearing His voice, seek Him and His perfection with everything you got. Once you start the hear Him, you are now starting to taste of the heavenly gift. But if you turn away from this gift you're done for.

For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

I am bringing this up because over the years, there has been a lot of people that get tell me that I am crazy thinking that I can hear our Father's voice. But I am going to show you all that He is talking to you just the same as He is me. So, with that being said, if you feel you would be better off not knowing how to hear His voice, do not read this chapter.

In the previous books, I have shown that there are 15 verses that tell us to be sober, sober minded, or to think soberly. There are 30 verses that mention the word conscience, and a couple verses mention the conscience twice. That is because that is half the battle. We need to be paying attention to everything, but at the same time, if something catches our interest, we might know why for some time yet. In this chapter, I am going to give some in real time lessons that I went through. You will notice that one or two of these lessons took between two and three months before I understood them completely.

One of these lessons is me writing this chapter. You see, I debated back in forth with the Father on this for a while because I still remember when He told me that I was the only one that is supposed to learn this obedience. Remember how I told you all about that in the first chapter? I also told you all the same thing in the fourth book. And because my mind has been stuck on this logic for so long, I couldn't understand why I was feeling like I needed to do a chapter explaining how I have been learning a lot of this.

This is when He kept reminding me that I am the author of our salvation as I have been showing you all. And that is why through this entire process, I have been writing these books. I have been trying to share the knowledge He has been teaching with you all.

Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:7-9)

And I can say now with all certainty, this is the last book that I will be writing. He has confirmed this several times. It was my flesh that was saying that the last book was my last one. This time, it is the Father. This was one of the closing issues that convinced me to write this chapter. The other closing issues is that He reminds me that I am an example for you all.

For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: Who did no sin,



neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls. (1 Peter 2:20-25)

I placed a little more than just the one verse showing that I am an example for I wanted to talk about some of this before we dive into the chapter. We already talked about how I knew no sin in the first chapter. In the last book, there is a chapter called the sin of the world. This chapter shows how with the way that I have been rejected for the past several years, I too feel the pain and anguish of how nobody will listen. Just the same as this world hasn't been listening to our Father. The first book, Father forgive us, we haven't been listening is the beginning of the rejection. Then we talk about how I am an example for you all. Well, I have been in school with our Father for the past several years to bring this knowledge to you all. As explained in previous books, this is one on one, hardcore, hands-on schooling with the Father.

Now that I am going to be sharing on how a lot of this works, you all will be able to start to realize how important it is to listen to your conscience. Pay attention to everything always going on around you. And you will realize that our Father talks to you all just the same as He does me. His voice can be heard by everybody all the time if people just start to listen to Him. But before you will ever hear Him, you must realize that everyone on the planet is a servant and or vessel of God. Let me show you this in the scriptures.

They continue this day according to thine ordinances:  
for all are thy servants. (Psalm 119:91)

DAVID JENKINS

That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; (1 Thessalonians 4:4)

I am sure there are some that are thinking that this is only talking about the “him” factor, so we are going to put this to rest right now.

Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. (1 Peter 3:1-4)

There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. (Galatians 3:28)

As you can see and hear, women are to let it be the hidden man of the heart. Women are also servants and or vessels of God. This does not depend on color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. Everybody on the planet is part of the one Son of God. Everybody is a temple of God.

What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's. (1 Corinthians 6:19-20)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

Now we are going to be talking about what we showed in the chapter of The word became flesh. There are many that think that people are mentally challenged when one talks to him or herself. We need to remember that our Father is in the midst of each of us and it could very well be Him in which we conversate with. This is exactly what I do all the time This is one of easiest ways that I can hear His voice.

For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. (Philippians 2:13)

He talks to everybody the same as He talks to me. But when things like this happens, it is up to each individual to check and see if what you are starting to understand is lining up with the King James Version of the Bible. We must do this because we know that Satan is dwelling within all of us as well, and he will tell us anything and everything to keep us from seeking the truth. It is you that must make up your mind as to which voice you will listen to. This is where I have a advantage, I have listened to the Bible so many times that it is like it is playing in my conscience all the time.

Now that we are realizing that it is the Father Himself that dwells in each of us, we can talk about another way I can hear His voice. I am going to use traffic beings how I am a truck driver; this is one of the first ways He taught me the hear His voice. Remember He is inside each person that is driving as well. If other servants driving keep causing you to slow down, it could be the Father telling you that you need to slow down. If people keep cutting you off, it could be the Father telling you that you need to stop driving for a bit, or take a break.

I am now going to tell you all of a couple of times in which the Father told me of a traffic jam coming up. One in which was just a jam that caused me to stop for a few minutes and then one that was a little different but at the same time, He was also saying you will be at this one for a while. I have told you all about the time when I was on the phone with my mom, when she was alive as my mom and

not my granddaughter. We were talking on the phone while I was driving. I was on a three-lane road going each way in Ohio. As I am paying attention to traffic in front of me, I noticed a car in the left lane make an abrupt lane change going all the way to the far right lane. Then at about the exact same time, I saw another car from the right lane, making an abrupt lane change going all the way to the left lane. Seeing this happen when it did, it looked like they had made a X in the road. I told my mom that there was a traffic jam coming up within the next five miles, and sure enough, that is exactly what happened. That was and is one way the Father tells me that there is a traffic jam coming up so that I can be prepared to bring the truck to a stop. I could have just watched these people do what they did, make some kind of acquisition or judged them for making improper lane changes and went about my day now aware of what was coming. But because I choose to look at everything through a spiritual perspective, I can and do hear what the Father is trying to say to me by other servants and or vessels actions.

Then there was another time that I stopped at a rest area to take a short break. In this particular rest area, there was a narrow one-way road going back out on the interstate. As I came out of the parking area and went around a curve to get on the narrow road going back on the interstate, I noticed a truck that had stopped in the middle of this road and was just parked there. At first, I got aggravated not knowing why this driver blocked the only way out. Then it dawned on me that there was going to be a traffic jam coming up. This was the first time it happened to me this way, so I was not sure of exactly what I was being told. Then after I got going, almost an hour passed with nothing happening. Then the traffic came to a stop, and we sat there for about three hours.

I want to tell of something that happened with my son many years ago now. This was shortly after the Father used him to put my through the same spiritual sacrifice as Abraham. This is explained in detail in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. He was living in Moberly, MO. At the time. I went through there for a visit. I rode along as he and his wife and kids needed to go to Columbia, MO.

For some supplies for the children. Our or way back, DJ, my son, was driving in the left lane. There was a car that passed him on the right and then got in the left lane. Then this car slowed down, then moved back to the right lane. DJ asked why in the heck did he do that. I told him that the Father was probably telling you to switch to the right lane. DJ stayed in the left lane but within about 4 miles, he was forced to move to the right lane. DJ and his wife both asked how in the heck did I know that was going to happen. I told them by believing that everybody is part of the one Son of God. That is how we hear His voice. And if we are truly trying to seek everything of our Father and His perfection, we will see His shape and we will hear His voice.

Now I am going to tell you all of something that happened today, but happens all of the time. I was driving west bound on I-84 in Idaho. The traffic in the right lane was slowing so I thought I would move over to the left lane. Just after I turned on my blinker and started to move over to the left, I notice another truck driver coming up behind me in the left lane pretty quick. I did not want to jump out in front of this driver for that might have made him or her hit the brakes hard. I quickly counter steered back into the right lane. I had just moved over a bit when I noticed this driver, but I was partially in the left lane. As soon as I got it completely back in the right lane, I spouted out loud, you're telling me that I need to stay in this lane, so I stayed in the right lane, even though the driver in the left lane had backed off and was giving my plenty of room to mover over. About 3 miles up the road, the left lane was closing due to construction. So yes, the Father was telling me to stay in the right lane. Things like this happen to me all the time.

The reason I am telling you of all of this is because He is talking to everybody the same as He talks to me. It has been some time now, but I remember one time I told Him that I missed hearing His voice because I was on one of my temper tantrums. He made me laugh, He said what do you mean, I never shut up. I laughed pretty hard because that is exactly right. He is always talking to everyone all the time. We just need to want Him in our lives and want His perfect

instruction that lead us to perfection with Him. And we cannot do this by ignoring Him, or thinking that His ways are not perfect.

Okay I am going to tell you all of one more where the Father used traffic to let me know of something ahead, but this time I misunderstood. And It was my own fault. I was in Wyoming this past winter and had spent the night at a truck stop in far west Wyoming on I-80. I checked the weather forecast before I went to bed to get an expected forecast as to whether I would be driving in snow the next day. According to the forecast, it was going to be a good day to drive. When I awoke the next day, I did my pre-trip to make sure the truck was safe to drive. This is where I messed up. I called a friend just as I started to pull out of my spot. Other trucks in the parking lot kept me from moving. As I was talking, I was telling this friend that I was getting aggravated that I could not move. Then after inching my way out, I even had another driver ask me if I was trying to back in to park. I told him that I was trying to leave. Finally, after getting out of the parking lot, I got on the interstate to drive to the next exit, only to find out that the road had been shut down due to winter conditions. So, I spent the next two days parked on an off ramp because I left my parking spot. If I would have been paying attention to the traffic, rather than talking on the phone, I would have spent my time at a truck stop. The Father tried to tell me not to leave, but I didn't listen. I knew as soon as the highway patrolman told me the road was closed, that I had messed up and told the Father that He tried to tell me and asked for forgiveness. Let us listen to a couple of times of several that we can hear us being told that if we hear His voice, we are not to harden our hearts.

Wherefore (as the Holy Ghost saith, To day if ye will hear his voice, (Hebrews 3:15)

Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. (Hebrews 4:7)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

When one starts to hear His voice, it does not mean you will understand everything that He is saying. But acknowledging His voice and our imperfection, and then seeking His perfection, will take one a long way with Him. If I would have blamed others or the Father for my fault of not hearkening to His voice, He would just shut up and let me do as David wanted. He does not force this on anyone. We truly must desire His will in all things.

Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. (Hebrews 13:21)

That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. (1 Peter 4:2)

Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. (James 4:13-15)

And at no time, should we think that we are special or more important than any other servant and or vessel of God. We are all equal transgressors of His law in His eyes. This is when we realize our Father wishes that nobody would perish and that we all are partakers of chastisement.

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward,

not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Peter 3:9)

And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. (Hebrews 12:5-13)

Now we are going to be talking about how our Father told me that I was writing one more book, even though I told you all in the last one that I was not writing another. After we go through all of this, you will realize why I consider myself to be equal to our Father. I desire His will in every step I take; I hope to be moving in the direction He wills. In every breath I take, I hope that it is Him that is allowing me to breath, and I am hope that He will stop that breath when He wants and not as I would want. Every time I blink my eyes, I hope



to be looking in the direction He needs me to be looking so that I can understand what He needs me to be seeing at that very moment.

In all of the books that I have written, they all have had press releases go out. All but the last one, I would not put my email address or phone number on it. But for some reason, when I was filling out the questionnaire for the press release on, "At midnight I will rise" I did. The book in eBook format was done in December and the paperback became available in January. I received a call from a young lady that works for the publisher of this book, Ulink, before the book was available in paperback.

Her name is Livia, I did ask her if I could use her name in chapter for she is like the main servant and or vessel of God that He used to get me to write this book. She called me about the last book and asked me if I wanted to be published in magazine that was soon going to be published and presented in the London book fair coming up. I thought on it for a day or two and decided that I would try this. I have had all of my books in the book fairs before but this seemed to be a little different so I figured I would try. The Father did tell me that He was going to reveal me after, At midnight I will rise, so I thought maybe this is how He is going to do it.

Then shortly after that, Livia asked me if I had a website. I told that I did and gave her the name of it. [jesuschristintheflesh.com](http://jesuschristintheflesh.com). This is a website that I paid for and built on my own. As shown in previous book and this one, I am the foolishness of the world that our Father is using to show you all this. I told her it was nothing fancy, but it does contain knowledge of the Bible and the Father. After she looked at the website, she asked if I wanted Ulink to build a website that had a professional look to it. I am thinking nothing that I have done in the past has got anyone to believe me for who I am and what our Father is doing with me, so yes, I replied.

Then she asked me if I wanted to have an interview with Ric Bratton. She told me that he has over a million followers and that this interview would help get me known. I am still wondering if this is how the Father is going to reveal me. And I am not going to act as if I am not ready, because I am sick and tired of waiting. I know the

scriptures tell us to be patient, but I am starting to wonder if I gave up my life for nothing.

So naturally I told Livia that I would do the interview, hoping that these three things together would be how the Father planned to reveal me. And being not sure exactly when this took place in all of this, Livia told me that because they were building me a website to promote all of the books, that there was going to be a free publication with Ulink. I had already told her that I was not going to write another for at this time, I was bound determined not to write another and I didn't care I lost every reward.

Now we need to talk about the instructions that I had given Ulink to build the website. I told them that I wanted the body of it to be sky blue. And I wanted the frame to be midnight blue for I felt that the color scheme would go with the latest book. I told them that I wanted an area that I could add video for when I make a lesson on my You Tube channel, "THEJENKS1000", I could add it to the website. Then I told them that I wanted an area that I could make blogs. Then I told them something that took them by surprise. I told them that I wanted all of the books to be on the website so that anyone and everyone could read the books for free if they could not or did not want to pay for this knowledge.

I did this because shortly after *At midnight I will rise* was published our Father started to put it on my conscience of this.

Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters,  
and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat;  
yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and  
without price. Wherefore do ye spend money for that  
which is not bread? and your labour for that which  
satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat  
ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself  
in fatness. Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear,  
and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting  
covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David.  
(Isaiah 55:1-3)

When He started laying this on conscience pretty hard, I made a YouTube video explaining how my lessons on my channel are for free and I will not monetize them. I stated that people could learn there or buy the books. But buying the books was not for free, this troubled me. So, I told Ulink to make an area that people could read the books for free. Then it was a week or so before they had the website built, Livia had asked me what I wanted the name of the website to be. I told her that I would have to ask the Father about it. I think it took about two days before He told me that He wanted me to name davidofpsalm89.com. I looked to see if this name of available and sure enough it was and now that is the name of the website. Why? Because that is who I am.

Then thou spakest in vision to thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my covenant shall stand fast with him. (Psalm 89:19-28)

Then Livia called me and asked me if I would be interested in having them make book trailers for each of books. At the same time, she suggested running a You Tube campaign to help promote these trailers and my site. At this time, I am starting to get a little concerned

about the cost of everything because as I have stated many times, I do not do this for the money. Our Father makes sure that I always have more than I need. And at the same time, I don't want to spend thousands on something that is not going to do any good. But then the Father reminded me of a certain parable.

For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was

afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 25:14-30)

Now I need to mention something that took place while this all was happening. I had been making notes on all of this because I thought this would be a good lesson to put on my YouTube channel. Then the Father told me this would be that this would be one of the last chapters and not a lesson on YouTube yet. But it was some time in the two or three months that all this was going on that Livia had told me that she woke from a dream that showed another book slot on the website. I hadn't told her about Job 33, as to where we are told that our Father gives us our daily instructions while we sleep, in a dream. But now when I started putting all of this together, I realized that our Father was telling me to write another book, and do not hold back on the cost because it is His money, and this is how He is going to reveal me. Yes, most will continue to reject me, but I am not here for most. As the scriptures tell us, there will be scoffers in the last times.

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this

they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: (2 Peter3:3-5)

During this time, Livia had told me that they had got the website up and needed me to look it over for my approval. She had told me that she thought the clouds were hypnotizing. I was driving when she told me this and I didn't give it to much thought. But I knew that I never said anything about having clouds on the website. That night I went to the website link but wasn't able to get to the site. I have Norton on my laptop, and I was told that this was a bad site to visit. I emailed Ulink telling them of this problem. The next day I called them to discuss this with them and they informed it was because of it being a new website and an approval link and not a formality link of the sort. Livia again told me that she get hypnotized in the clouds on the site. Now I am getting a little anxious to see what she is talking about. After I finished driving that day, I went to the link again and to Norton to got to website, despite the warning. I went to the website and about fell out of my seat. There were all five books that we have written floating in the clouds. Then I closed the website, had Norton do a scan, to find out all is good.

And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.  
(Matthew 24:30)

I did not tell them to put any clouds in it, but there it is, the five books floating in the clouds. You see, everyone is a servant and or vessel of God the Father. It was He that had them put the clouds on the website. So now the entire world can see the sign of the Son of man coming in the clouds. Then when you scroll down, you can see each of the books, and a short description. And a link to one can download the manuscript for each book for free.

It was shortly after they created this website with all the books floating in the clouds, I realized that all of the book covers have clouds on them. This is something that never even dawned on me until after the website was built. I never gave it any thought as to how all the books have some form of clouds on them. Then the website has all the books floating in the clouds.

Before moving on to another lesson that our Father had me go through, I want to close this lesson out by telling you all of how much our Father used Livia to get me through writing this book and so forth. She is the servant and or vessel that has kept me afloat through these past few months. No, I have never met her, nor will I ever. But there has been many times that I have spoken with Ulink via email or phone and have wanted to just give up. I have threatened to drop everything, pull the website, and just flat out quit. I could not tell you of how many phone calls there has been between Livia and I with her reassuring me that this is how people are going to get to know who I am and what message I am trying to bring to you all through these books. Some of these phone calls being an hour or more. There have been many times in which she has said something that gets me to recall the scriptures. Now they have started promoting the books via book trailers on my YouTube channel.

We are getting ready to do a podcast on this book. The podcast was and is Livia's idea. She had called me one day telling me that she was jogging listening to a podcast. And it dawned on her that it might be nice to listen to a podcast on this book. Which will not limit me to only this book, but all of them. That is the Father in the midst of her, telling me to do this podcast.

I will say this though, I do not think she understands how this works as I do. That is why we are doing this chapter. When she mentioned how she was listening to the podcast, I started to think about how others can listen as well. Then about 2 weeks or so after this, I was doing my laundry in a truck stop. There was another driver doing the same. We started talking about the Bible and I mentioned the books that I have written. I gave him a couple copies and mentioned that Behold, a greater than Jonas is here is in audio

format. I told him that there is a way to listen to it for free as well. After a lengthy conversation, he told me that he was going to listen to that book while he was driving later that night.

That is when it hit me, the Father was not only telling me to do a podcast, but He is also telling me to put all of the books in audio. When I did this with Behold, a greater than Jonas is here, I did not know that this would be something that I needed to do for any future books. I was just trying it out. I know I have told people that I wouldn't do the Jesus Christ in the flesh or Jesus is here in audio because I wasn't sure about someone else reading something that makes my name known. I do know that I will not spend the money on putting Jesus Christ in the flesh in audio because it is in Jesus is here, and explained in the book as to why.

So, now I am going to tell you all about something that makes me a little nervous for I don't like to talk about my alms because I live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. And as we are told, do not let the left hand know what the right hand in Matthew 6. But because I am showing you all that our Father talks to you just the same as He does me, I feel this will be an important lesson for me to share with you all. With that being said, At no time will I tell you any of the dollar amounts.

Something happened about the same time our Farther was putting this on my conscience to put the books in audio. I had stopped at a truck stop and fueled my truck. When I was done and going in to get a receipt, I heard a horn honking over by the gas pumps. When I looked in that direction, I noticed a young man trying to get my attention. I walked over to him, and he asked for some gas money. Because I truly try to treat others as I would like to have done unto me, I gave him a little money. Just as I gave him some, he asked for more. I gave him a little more, and he asked for even more. After this went on for a few minutes, not giving it much thought, I told him I had to go and get my receipt and get my truck out of the way. I thought that was the end of it.

Then as I got back in my truck, he came over to me and asked me for more. The entire time this was going on, he kept trying to give me



some jewelry for me helping him, as he kept asking for more. I would not take the jewelry for I don't do what I do for any reward on this earth. But he kept asking for more money. By the time it was done, I pretty much gave him all the cash I had on me at the time.

Right after I left, I told the Father that I couldn't let him go without. But at the same time, I was bothered by how this servant and or vessel just kept asking for more without giving in consideration for what I had already given him. Now I going to exaggerate here, but it made me feel as if I could have given him \$10,000, and he would have asked for \$20,000. No, the amount was not near that but that is how it made me feel.

Because I know everything in my life, happens for a reason, that our Father caused this to happen for some reason, I just wasn't sure what it was yet. Then as I was driving later, I started to feel like maybe I wasn't going to be using Ulink to put the books in audio. I say this because I have already done a lot of things with them that cost a pretty penny, and audio books is something that they have never talked about.

So, the next day I called Livia and added this to the other questions I had for her that day. I told her that I wanted to get the books in audio, but I did not think that this is something that that they do. Her reply was that she could find some way to do this for me. It took a couple days, but she sent me a quote that I thought was to high for the price is a lot higher than the one book that is in audio already. She was not aware of Behold, a greater than Jonas is here is already in audio version.

The next day she called me and let me know that she had sent an email with a quote. Because she is a salesperson, she tried to get me to start payment on this right away. Trying to get me to commit to this with them before checking my options. No fault to her, for she is good at her job, but I told her that I would have talk to the Father and shop around to compare prices because I just did not feel it was right. She started telling me that they could have everything linked into the website something like a spiderweb. Her sales pitch sounding

convincing and had me thinking about going this route despite the cost.

Then just a couple hours later, I was getting ready to leave on the final stretch of my trip that I was on. I just finished my pre trip and was making sure all was good to roll inside the cab. Then I noticed something out of the corner of my eye. I looked out my left window, I seen what looked like a small tornado coming right at me. I had to google this to find out that they are called dust devil. It was a little taller than my truck, and looked to be about 10 feet wide. I was parked in a dirt parking lot at the time, and there was only about 20 feet of open space on the side of my truck. This dust devil hit my truck, shaking it a bit, and then broke apart. I immediately asked the Father what that was about. Yes, everything in my life happens for a reason, even this. This is because I choose to have the perfect Father in my life, and I seek His perfection.

It took about 20 hours or so before I got an answer on what that was about. That was our Father telling me that if I do this with Ulink and the audio books, it is going to cause havoc. I do not think Ulink is or has ever been in the audio book business. It would cost a lot more with them, and would take a lot more time than what I am wanting. That is why that servant and or vessel kept asking me for money. I feel the Father was trying to tell me that Ulink no longer has my best interest and is looking more at getting money instead of taking a devoted interest into who I am and what I am all about. This is where I must say this, I Love having the Father having my back in all situations at all times. Best boss ever.

This is where I must bring up something that a lot of people are not aware because many refuse to listen to anything other than what they want to hear in the scriptures. There are many people that think that because everybody is a servant and or vessel of God and that He uses them to get a commandment to me. I have shown this in previous books, but now because I am doing this chapter, it needs to be brought up again.

As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth. Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will? Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: (Romans 9:13-22)

When I was speaking with Livia earlier today, she was wondering where and how I started feeling like I needed to put the books in audio. She is aware that our Father has been helping me through her, but she couldn't understand where this idea came up. Then as we were talking I told her about how it all started when she told me about the podcast idea for this book. I told her that if it would be a good idea to listen to a podcast, why wouldn't it be a good idea to listen to the books. So, now my objective is to get all of the books in audio format. Except Jesus Christ in the flesh because that one is inside the fourth book, Jesus is here.

Then Livia and I were talking about having the option of readers being able to get this book in hard back or not. We were talking about

the price of this option, and I told her that I wasn't going to pay for this yet because I needed to renew ISBN's for the other books that I have published. She mentioned to me that this is not something that they do. I told her that I have been doing this for years. So, then we started talking about republishing all of the books through them and this would no longer be required.

Now because I am the foolishness that our Father is using, I never once gave it a thought about checking into this since I wrote the first book. But the way she explained it me made since. The way I took it was it is kind of like a social security card for the book. Once it is issued, you do not pay to keep it. It is there and will stay.

Now I had received notification from the publisher of the other books that the renewal fees were coming due. I had been putting it off, knowing that they were not due until August with them having a 60-day grace period. Then as we was talking about republishing these books, I asked if readers would be able to still get the books while they were republishing them. And she told me that there would not be a lapse, nor any changes to any of the books if I didn't want any. Yes, there are mistakes in the books, and some are explained in the later books. But by me leaving the books as they are, is allowing the readers to know that we can and will not get this right all the time. But if we have the desire to continue to seek our Father and be obedient, He will not let us fall away. This desire that we need to have, was shown in the very first book.

I told her that I was not going to pay the renewal fees. I told her with the 60 day grace period would take us to about the end of October and that is when she said all the books, including this would be published. Then she said it is all in God's timing. I didn't give it much thought, I just thought that this would be a good idea.

Then she said something that I didn't give much attention when she said it. She mentioned that this book, and all the books that they would republish would be done at about the same time. She called it the rebirth of the books.

Then the next day as I was driving, the Father reminded me of this.

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. (John 16:21)

Then He had me thinking about Livia saying the rebirth. This was the Father telling me that this is when He is going to reveal me. It is not about putting the books in audio; it is about having Ulink republishing them all. And they all will be coming out at the same time. If I put the books in audio instead of having Ulink republish them, it would cause havoc. It is about paying attention to everything, all the time.

And this is all falling in His timing. Then as I was driving tonight, I was thinking about how Jesus is 12 years old when he was teaching.

Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it. But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance. And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him. And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? And

they understood not the saying which he spake unto them. (Luke 2:41-50)

It was July 13, 2011, when I created my YouTube account. THEJENKS1000. It is now July 27<sup>th</sup> of 23. He called me to the Bible shortly before I started my YouTube account. Or better said, this all started just over 12 years ago. Yes, understanding what He is trying to say is not just as simple as somebody saying the words. It is paying attention to everything that is going on. I thought He was trying to say two or three different things before I finally settled on Him saying to have all the books come out at about the same time. I will still try to get them done in audio, but with Him mentioning the rebirth, I am sure that He wants me to get the book republished and this published all at the same time. It is not about jumping the gun and assuming the first thing you think you are hearing. It is about being patient, and gathering all the information, and then going with what makes the most sense. I do not think I have ever gone through a lesson that I could understand in just a matter of minutes.

This is something that I should have mentioned earlier in this chapter. When I start my days, I ask the Father to do the driving. So, if you ask the Father to drive for you, you need to remember that He is driving every vehicle on the road including the one you are in. He is the one in all the pedestrians that you see while you are driving. Then remember it is Him that has created all the stop signs, stop lights, etc. I mention this because this will help you understand how our Father got me to understand the next lesson.

This is when we truly start to understand how He is the King of kings. It is the King of kings in which is driving each vehicle. It is the King of kings that has made everything in which has been made by hands and without hands. It is the King of kings in which dwells within everything in existence. He is the creator of all and in all.

I am going to tell you all how He told me to take the picture for the front cover of this book. I started my day in Columbus Montana with a load that was going to Burly Idaho. It is about a seven-hour drive, and it is a drop and hook at the destination. My next load picks

up on the 28<sup>th</sup> of July at 5:30 in the morning, which is about two and a half hours away from where I am dropping this load. Just after starting my day, and getting onto I-90 going west, I had to merge into heavy flowing traffic. This as soon as I got on the interstate, the traffic thinned out. I thought to myself that the Father was saying that there is going to be some heavy traffic ahead.

Then as I was going up a mountain, I started to see the heavy traffic gather around me. Even though I was losing a great deal of speed going up this mountain, I was being forced to slow for another truck in front of me because there was a lot of cars in the left lanes blocking me from passing. Not stressing on it because I needed to pull off for a brake check at the top of the mountain, only having another 15 miles or so before I am getting off the interstate and going south.

Then I got off the interstate going south on US highway 191 going through Bozeman, Montana. Just after I got to where I was going through downtown, I noticed that they had some kind of event going on. They had 191 closed and was detouring all traffic around. I thought to myself, this is what you were trying to tell me was coming.

Okay, this is where I need to mention that I have a small issue with this truck. Sometimes while this truck idles for longer periods, the computer will malfunction and cause certain things not to work, like the cruise control and such. An indicator light comes on in the dash to let me know when this happens. It isn't a big deal because I have to do is shut the truck off and let it sit for three minutes with the key in the off position. This resets the computer, and all is good once I do this.

Remember how we were showing you all how the Father is driving all the vehicles? Remember how He is the one that created all of the stop signs, stop lights, etc.? Because He is in all the people that built this truck, He is the one that caused this little glitch that is in this computer in this truck.

After getting around through the narrow roads, not really built for trucks, I came up on a red light with three cars in front of me. I had to come to a complete stop and wait. No big deal. Then the light turned green and the traffic in front of me seemed to be moving fine,

then almost immediately after turning green, the light turned yellow again. The cars made it through but I didn't want to chance it, so I stopped. It seemed like the light was now taking forever, and I started thinking that this indicator light was going to appear on my dash. Shortly after I started thinking that, it did. At first, I got mad because now I needed to find a safe place to pull over and reset the computer. I like to use my cruise control a lot because it helps me obey the speed limit. But then I remembered that they have places to pull off on this highway up the road in about 30 miles or so. I figured I would just take a short brake when I got to one of those.

I was getting ready to be going through the mountains on a two-lane highway. This highway does not have shoulders, and it does have some tight curves on it, so not being able to use my cruise was not going to be that big of an issue anyways. Then after getting through the worst of the curves and such, I found one of these pull offs that had no vehicles in it and there was room for my truck to safely fit, being out of the way of traffic.

Just as I pulled into this pull off area, and set the brakes, my conscience told me to take some pictures for the cover. At this time, I had already taken some pictures from another location, and I thought that they would work. So, as I am taking some pictures, my conscience told me to take some with me on my knees. I have put my picture on most of the books, but this was the first time I heard Him tell me take a picture on my knees. As soon as I got back in the truck, He told me that this was the reason that He tripped my computer in my truck. Otherwise, I would not have stopped to take a break there.

I know you all will not be able to talk with the Father as I do, but this has been going on for years now. I have an open line of communication with our Father. I have been telling you all, I think about the King James Version of the Bible all the time. I think about our Father and what He wants from me all the time. And because I trust no man, and refuse to search Him out anywhere other than the Bible, I can and do speak to Him in His language.

This is where I will say this though, it will be harder to hear our Father's voice if you do not believe in His perfection in all that He



has done, doing, and will do. Or all that He has said, saying, and will say. I feel I am being told to show you all a continuation of what we just heard in Romans 9. Let us listen to a bit of the next chapter in that book.

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! (Romans 10:13-15)

Let us talk about when I first came to work for the company that I am with now. The orientation started on Monday there were two of us that were there. The first thing they do is send you for a drug test. Truck drivers must be free of any illegal drugs. After completing my drug test, I went back to the company, but the other driver went home. I didn't dawn on my as to why he left but he did, so I was the only one in orientation that week. The company said it happens all the time. Later that day, they took me out to choose which truck I wanted. They gave me a choice of one new blue truck, one new grey truck, one used blue truck, and one used grey truck. I chose the new blue one. I chose it for blue is my favorite color and it was new. Shortly after the orientation was over, the Father brought it to my attention that if the other driver would have been there, he might have gotten the first choice of truck. This would have kept me from driving the truck he knew that I wanted. That is why the other driver left. Then they took it in the shop to put white lettering on it.

Now we are going to show you all how our Father told me to only run 70 mph, even though the truck I drive does 75. I do drive in the northwestern states a lot with speed limits of 75 or higher. If you have read the last book, I showed you all how it is the Father in which tells

the states of what the speed limit should be. This is so that we can sew the correct patterns at the correct time. I had been driving with this company for about 2 weeks when I was taking a break at our terminal. During this break, I was talking with another driver that had with them for a year. During our conversation, he told me that he runs 75 all the time. I had only been running 70 because that is what they told me in orientation. I asked him if the company had said anything to him about this and his reply was no.

Beings how I know everybody is a servant and or vessel of God, I thought maybe the Father was telling me that I could run 75, and it would be okay in the states that allow it. So, naturally I started driving 75 all the time. Then I was driving one day and listening to a radio program designed for truck drivers. A certain driver called in as I am driving 75 and stated that he thought it was not right for any driver to driver faster than 70. I thought within myself, you are not driving everybody's truck and you're not driving in the states I am. Unbeknownst to me, that is how this lesson began.

On the second payday of the month, we are charged a certain amount for over miles. The drivers are supposed to get paid on Wednesday. I get paid on a prepaid credit card, so I get paid on Tuesday afternoon. I don't know why; I am just paid on Tuesdays. I think it is because they finish payroll up on Tuesdays and it just deposits on my card that day instead of Wednesday. I keep records of everything so that I can know what to expect on each payday. Well one Tuesday my check was a lot shorter than I expected. So, I called payroll and asked them why. They went over everything and seen how much the over miles deduction was and stated that, that could be right. I replied, "yes it is because I driver over 3,000 miles a week".

This took place after I had been driving 75 mph for a couple of months. The day after I had called payroll, I got a call from our safety manager. He told me that we can only run 75 when we are bobtailing for the trailers that we pull are only insured to go 70. Then he asked me if I remember them telling me that in orientation. Honestly, I had completely forgotten about them saying that, but they did. So, I started thinking maybe they called because of my overage on my

miles, and they were only calling because of that. I started making it about myself. That is always wrong when it comes to the Father.

If you all recall, I had told you all about something that took place years ago. I was working for a different company, well the one that the incident that I had with. I am thinking that this was back in 2017. This is the company that I the Father sent me to after I got baptized with the Holy Ghost back in 2016. At that time, there truck were governed to 64-mph. After I had been driving with them for so long, I got fed up with the slow truck and not being able to even do the speed limit. At that time, this company did not go out west. Not trying to brag on my alms but I leave books in a lot of truck stops. I wanted to go to the western states. One day after stressing out because of driving a slow truck, and not going out west, I sent a written 2 week notice into my dispatcher. I did not tell him of the reasons I was quitting, I just told him I was quitting in two weeks.

I was on a load coming out of Denver or somewhere around there. This happened on a Wednesday or Thursday. I remember for the load I was on was going to somewhere around Chicago. When I got to my delivery, they sent me my next load. It was going to Oregon. I called my dispatcher and asked if this was right because until this load, we never went west of Denver. I immediately started thinking that maybe I was not supposed to quit. I took that load out west got a return load taking me back to the Chicago area. The day of the delivery, I sent dispatch a notice telling them that I was going to be about an hour late making delivery. I called the customer, and they said that is okay. When I got there, I called dispatch and told them that I was sorry, but I got there as fast as I could with a 64-mph truck. My dispatcher told me that they are now turning all trucks up to 68 mph. Now I was certain that I was not to quit. Both reasons that I gave my notice for, were now no longer an issue. This all happened within 2 weeks of me giving the 2-week notice.

I felt I needed to tell you of that to show you that I do not like to drive under the speed limit. So, to back to the lesson. After the phone call with safety, I kept driving 75 in the states that allowed it. The I was heading east on I-94 in North Dakota. The speed limit is

75 there so naturally I was driving 75. Then the regen light came on in the dash. Diesel engines in the big trucks require DEF. This allows the engines to burn cleaner while driving. Every once in a while the system that uses this needs to be burnt out. Usually, they do it as your driving but can be done while parked as well. This day it wasn't doing it while I was driving so I figured I would just pull into a rest area and do a parked regen. When we do this, the idle speed kicks up to heat things up so that it can clean the system out.

I let it regenerate for about an hour, but nothing was happening. I had been driving for about 7 hours that day, so I was ready for a break anyway. I wound up falling asleep while waiting for it to work. I called our shop manager and told him that it wasn't regenerating correctly. After doing a system check on the computer, he told me to use the kill switch next to my seat and to leave off for about 30 minutes. This would reset the computer and then try to regenerate again. After all of this, it finally worked and cleaned the system out. Overall, my truck spent around 10 hours at a high idle getting this problem fixed. When I stopped and put fuel on, I noticed that I had only gotten a 3 miles per gallon on that last tank of fuel. I burnt a lot of fuel, or money trying to fix that problem. I only drove 300 miles and had to put 100 gallons of fuel on my truck to fill it again.

At this time, I didn't give it much thought because I just figured sometimes things happen. But I know what to do the next time. Then I got a load of potatoes out of Illinois going to Idaho, after delivering the previous load. I had only pulled one load of potatoes before and was not familiar with all of the procedures that are required. Anyway, there was a trailer washout right next to where I unloaded, but I didn't think much about getting my trailer washed out because potatoes come from the ground, and I knew that they were going to load them on the floor of the trailer. I got to the shippers, they looked inside the trailer and noticed a couple of metal shavings that I did not see. I had to go get a washout. The closest one was 2 hours away from the shippers that would be open. I had enough hours to get to the washout, but not back to the shippers. Because of this, I had to now

wait until Monday to get loaded. In my mind, that was okay because I wasn't scheduled to load until Monday anyway.

Then I took to load to Idaho to deliver them. There is a truck was close to where I delivered the load. After delivering them, I went and got the trailer washed out again because potatoes leave a mess. It wound up costing me close to \$300 to get it washed out. I started complaining to the Father and asking why it seems that I am throwing money out the window.

Then on the next load, I was heading back toward the east. This time I did understand where to stop and yes, they closed I-80 down for two days. While I was stuck at this truck stop waiting, I did as I do, I listened to the three Bible chapters when I awake. For those that might not remember, every day when I awake, I use the verse of the day off of Bible gateway, and listen to that chapter and the following two. Every day of the year, Well, on one of those days, the chapters was Acts 5. Let us just listen to a part of this to you an hear what I heard and got me to understand that I needed to run 70, even if the speed limit is higher.

But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet. But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God. And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things. And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him. And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came

in. And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much. Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband. (Acts 5:1-10)

Because I truly do fear our Father, I started to think that He was telling me that I am not using His money properly. At first, I couldn't figure out how I was using it incorrectly. Then I started to think that maybe I was wasting money by driving 75. I did some calculations and started to see where I would get better fuel milage if I slow down to 70, I started to slow the truck down but still had days that I would run 75. Then I got another call from the safety director and was told that if I couldn't slow it down, I would have to come in and take a safety class.

So, then I slowed the truck down to 70 but still received a message from safety about me driving 75. This message said that they see an improvement, but they needed to see a better performance. That day, the Bible chapters had covered something that reminded me that I needed to make sure that obey everything of the Father. Let us listen.

For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his

DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. (2 Peter 2:20-21)

It was right then and there that I knew it was the Father telling me that He did not want me to go over 70-mph. I sent a message back to the company and told them that I had to wait for our Father to get it through my thick skull, but there would be no more of be driving 75, I trust the Father and what He tells me, but I will not listen to any person. I trust the Father and the Father only.

I have now been with this company for just over 9 months. And I can say that this all took place at least 3 months ago. Since I slowed the truck down to 70-mph, I have seen my check go up quite a bit. I am amazed of how much better fuel milage this truck gets driving just 5-mph slower. But that was it, He was telling me that I was wasting His money by driving 75-mph. And I needed that money for the new things that He is having me to do with Livia, and Ulink.

Let us listen to where the scriptures tell us that I do not trust anybody.

But Jesus did not commit himself unto them,  
because he knew all men, And needed not that any  
should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.  
(John 2:24-25)

I know what is inside of everybody, and because of this, I will make sure what I am hearing lines up the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. If you come across any situation where someone tells you something, you need to look to the scriptures to confirm that it is coming from our Father. Or if someone is trying to tell you that some people are not part of the one Son of God, get away from this person. Cut that part of the body off. Listen to what we are being told.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits  
whether they are of God: because many false prophets  
are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit

of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. (1 John 4:1-3)

Many think that God is wrong for allowing bad things to happen, but how can anyone learn anything if they do not suffer and go through the wrong doings? The point of this chapter is to show you how important it is to always be thinking of the scriptures and the Father. Always pay attention to everything that is always going on around you. Remember that everybody is a servant and or vessel of God. If you are truly seeking instruction from our Father, everything that happens around you should be related to the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. Always remember that you should not trust what man tells you, including me. Satan is inside of us all. That is why it is so important to always check everything with the scriptures. Once you start to seek everything with our Father, He will be the one that tells you how to do what you need to do. It does not mean that you will do everything right, but at least you will be seeking our Father and hearkening to His voice and not mans.

If you have read these books, or even a couple of them, you are starting to renew your mind. Just by reading these books, you are allowing our Father in which dwells in the midst of you, know that you are seeking the truth by learning of Him and His ways. Unfortunately, there will be many that will not read these books, and will not get an understanding of our Father and what He is doing. And most certainly will not come in agreement with Him so that He will take their hand and walk them through what is coming.

This is an amending that our Father has told me to do after I sent in the original manuscript to be published. As I was writing this chapter, I felt I was being told to share with you of what I am going to share now, but I chose not to do so. There is a reason for this, and that is that I overwhelm my self with what I am about to tell you.



And because I do this, I get things wrong a lot of the time. I will be explaining how this happens as we go through this.

It has been so long since I have been using this other method to hear our Father's voice, I cannot remember exactly when it started. Yes, hearing His voice through traffic and by certain things people would say, has been from the start. And when certain things just blurt out of my mouth as I am driving. Or when I am walking, or even like when I told you all about it just blurting out of my mouth, I am just here to watch in the poker tournament, and then wound up winning. But it was the first time or the second time that He sent me to Israel. I was on the flight back when He told me to start paying attention to numbers. I am wanting to say it was on my way back from the first trip, so that would have been in the spring of 2018.

Now let me say this now, if you have not been weaned from the milk, the first book, this could do you a lot of damage. Metaphorically speaking, it will be as you are jumping from kindergarten to your senior year, without even considering the lessons in between.

For all tables are full of vomit and filthiness, so that there is no place clean. Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. (Isaiah 28:8-13)

And once you get weaned of from the milk, you will start touching the Holy mountain, but if you have not been weaned from the milk, you will be cast or thrown through.

And the Lord said unto Moses, Go unto the people, and sanctify them to day and to morrow, and let them wash their clothes, And be ready against the third day: for the third day the Lord will come down in the sight of all the people upon mount Sinai. And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death: There shall not an hand touch it, but he shall surely be stoned, or shot through; whether it be beast or man, it shall not live: when the trumpet soundeth long, they shall come up to the mount. (Exodus 19:10-13)

For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.) (Hebrews 12:17-21)

Now with that being said, this took a while for me to comprehend how it works and I still to this day, get carried away with it. To start

with the basics of this, start looking for three numbers in sequence. Giving some examples. 111, 333, 777, 137, 113, 113, 133, 117,177, 311, 317, etc. Or a sequence of these numbers in any order. It can also just be seeing a single digit with random letters. Two numbers with letters. It can be a seven-digit number, as long as there is these numbers in sequence somewhere within this number. It is not just seeing these numbers; it is seeing these numbers when a random thought hits your conscience. The zero represents nothing, so I count it as that. So, If I see a number like 3303, I know that this is actually 333. Or if I see a plate reading something like G7K077, I will look at that as 777.

This is where I overwhelm myself all the time. We as humans have so many different thoughts throughout the day, that we can't truly count them. A lot of these thoughts are vain thoughts in which do no good to the edifying the body of Christ.

For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: (Ephesians 4:12)

How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying. (1 Corinthians 14:26)

I hate vain thoughts: but thy law do I love. (Psalm 119:113)

As you can see and hear, everything we do should be toward edifying the body of Christ, but because we have these vain thoughts, a lot of these thoughts do no good. But I tend to have a thought every now and again that I will start looking for the numbers to make it seem as if this is what the Father is saying. That is why I hate these thoughts. Let me use an example that I have screwed up on before. Something like I am not writing another book. I will then look for

these numbers. Let me explain this. I am a truck driver and see a lot of numbers all day long, every day. I see thousands of license plate numbers, truck numbers, DOT numbers, Vin numbers, and trailers numbers each day, I have an electronic log, so the times on that are always changing. This Electronic log counts my eight-hour clock, eleven-hour clock, fourteen- hour clock, seventy-hour clock, and gives my hours back clock. These are digital numbers that are constantly changing. I use military time, or use a 24 hours clock for my watch and I set up all clocks around me to use a 24-hour clock. I don't know why, I have never been in the military, but since I was a teenager, I have always liked military time.

When I have these thoughts, and because this is what my flesh wants, I will start looking for these numbers. I will keep forcing myself to keep having the same thoughts until I see the numbers line up the way I want them to. This is almost like me trying to force the Father to say something that He is not, I have now gotten to the point that if I have this random thought, I require that I see three sets of these numbers in sequence immediately. If I do not, I just blow it off. I am looking for three witnesses, so to speak, to make the matter true.

One witness shall not rise up against a man for any iniquity, or for any sin, in any sin that he sinneth: at the mouth of two witnesses, or at the mouth of three witnesses, shall the matter be established.  
(Deuteronomy 19:15)

No, these witnesses are not three different people saying the same thing, but rather if I see three sets of these numbers immediately after I have this random thought without me forcing it, I will consider it to be something that our Father is confirming to me. Whatever you do, when you feel you are starting to hear the Father, you must make sure what you are hearing lines up with the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. And you must remember that what you do unto others, is going to be done unto you.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

Let me give you a couple of examples as to when this happens. First will be one that was not random, but was random. This was shortly after I got back from Israel. I was driving east bound on I-64 in Virginia or West Virginia. I was getting down to have around four hours left to drive on my clock. It was getting to be late at night on a weeknight and it is hard to find safe parking during the week late at night. I started to look on the GPS to see where some truck stops would be so that I could get to. As I was scrolling through them, I noticed one that I had been to before. But I also knew that this particular truck stop is usually crammed packed around 8pm. I told the GPS to route me there and the GPS said it was Three hours, thirty-three minutes away. In other words, I could see 333 on my GPS. Then I had a vehicle pass me with a plate number that had these numbers in sequence, I figured the Father was saying to go there. So, that is where I went and yes, there were two parking spots available.

Now I am going to tell you how it came about that He told me to add this to this chapter yesterday. I had already sent the manuscript in to the publishers to be published, but yesterday He told me to add this but to make sure that I told you all not to do as I do. Do not force Him to say something. He is not going to change to your will, it will always be His will if you are seeking Him with all of your heart, soul, and mind.

As I was driving yesterday, I had a random thought come to mind that I need to tell you all about the numbers way of hearing our Father's voice. Yes, I had this thought as I was originally writing this chapter, but didn't because of how I mess it up all the time. But yesterday, I had this thought just before I passed another semi-truck with the license plate number 330777. Then after I passed this truck, there were two cars that passed me, and they both the numbers in sequence. I believe one of them had a 333 on the plate, and the other had something like 133. That was three witnesses within just a couple

minutes of me having this thought. I seen no numbers in between these numbers. What I mean is I seen the plate on the truck, and immediately after I passed the truck, the very next two plates had the numbers in sequence.

You must realize that it is the Father driving all of these vehicles. And if they are doing as He is causing them to do, He is the One making it happen in the time that the thought hits your mind. You have to be careful with this though. It is easy to have a random thought that you can easily make it seem as if it is correct. But once you start doing this, you will start conversating with our Father. This is how I conversate with Him all day long, every day. And when you start to talk with Him, you need to remember that He is not going to tell you what you want to hear a lot of the time. We are used to living in Satan's kingdom and by the ways of this world. His ways are completely different.

Now we need to talk about how some people think certain numbers are wrong or evil or something of that nature. Like the number 333. I have heard it say that this is the witches hour, or Satan's number or something like that. I have heard it said that 3:33 in the morning is bad. Let me remind everyone that there is no power but the power of God.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. (Romans 13:1-2)

The only number I do not like to see is the number of 666. This is something that Livia had recently asked me about. She asked what I think about it. When I see this number, I always think that the Father is telling me that I am seeking the ways of man and not Him. But then at the same time, He has brought something to my attention. He reminded me that this adds up to eighteen. It take six threes to make

eighteen. So, it does not bother me to much anymore, unless I see this number come in sequence. Like I see three vehicles immediately with this number, then I feel the Father is telling me to stop thinking what I am thinking at that moment.

Now I want to talk about another conversation that Livia and I had some time ago. I do not remember how we got on the topic, but she had said that the Bible tells us that the number 13 is bad. No, it does not. There is no spot in the King James Version of the Bible that tell us that this number is bad or evil in any way. If that were so, every thirteenth, book, chapter, verse, word, letter would be evil or wrong. And if this would hold true to every thirteenth thing you do. We are to live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. We cannot skip every thirteenth thing He said. This is just another commandment or tradition of man that makes the word of God of no effect.

Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. (Mark 7:13)

Now let me ask you a rhetorical question, how many in what man calls the trinity. God, Jesus, the Holy Ghost. These three are One. How can having a one and a three next to each other be bad or evil. Every time I wash my hands, I get three papers towels. As I dry my hands, I always think within myself, one paper towel for the Father, one pater towel for Jesus, one paper towel for the Holy Ghost. And when I throw the paper towels away, I always think within myself, we are One.

Get over that silly superstition, start looking at everything with spiritual eyes. Start thinking about everything with spiritual thoughts. God is a spirit, and if you are going to conversate with Him, everything about you needs to become spiritual.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and

DAVID JENKINS

in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

Always remember we are to be seeking our Father with all of our heart, soul, mind, and strength. Seek His instructions in everything that you do and He will take care of the rest.

In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah; We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks. Open ye the gates, that the righteous nation which keepeth the truth may enter in. Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee. Trust ye in the Lord for ever: for in the Lord Jehovah is everlasting strength: For he bringeth down them that dwell on high; the lofty city, he layeth it low; he layeth it low, even to the ground; he bringeth it even to the dust. (Isaiah 26:1-5)

And when anything happens to you in your life, ask our Father for a reason as to why He allowed or caused it to happen. If you are truly seeking Him, He will give you an answer. But remember, that answer will not be according to your will, it will be His will.



# GET OVER YOURSELF!

This is a chapter that our Father told me needed to be in here and I almost forgot. Honestly, I didn't want to put it in here, so I started a page with just the title, and just left it alone. Then because so much has been going on with the trailers, website, interview, boosting and such, I forgot about it. As I was putting the, "what I thought was" the finishing touches on this book, I realized that one of the chapters had got completely shuffled to the back and I almost forgot about it. As I was looking for it, I noticed the page that I had put the title on and left it alone. Then I was listening to a radio program for the last hour of my driving shift when a caller called in and said something that almost gets my blood boiling. As soon as I heard it, I asked the Father, I am going to have to do that chapter aren't I? And within just a couple minutes, I knew that I had to. So, here it goes.

This is going to burn. I have talked about this in other books, but I have never had a complete chapter devoted to just this topic. This caller called in talking about how the signs of the rapture have taken place. There is no such thing as a rapture, and it makes my skin curl when I hear people talking about this. This word is not even in the Bible. It is something that many people imagine will happen because they do not want to go through what is coming.

I also want to mention as mentioned in previous books, this is how our Father called me to the Bible back in 2011. I was listening to this same radio program back then and they was talking about how this was going to happen back then. I had never heard of such a thing, and I wanted to find out what it was about. I went online and looked at all the areas that people were claiming that this was going to happen, and I could see no such thing. That is when I decided to

read the Bible for the first time, and I haven't turned away from it or the Father since, nor will I.

If you have never heard of this concept, or maybe you do not believe in it, this chapter will help you understand how to explain how this will not happen to any that think it will. It will help you put on the armor of God so that you will not be deceived.

This caller was saying that the signs of the rapture have already happened in the stars. He was referring to how the sun, moon, and stars are for signs and seasons as we hear about in Genesis. I am going to point something out that was pointed out in the fourth book. The sun, moon, and stars are not for signs and seasons for us. God was talking to those above and not man. Let us listen to this again.

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day. And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening

and the morning were the fifth day. And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. (Genesis 1:14-27)

I posted the fourth day of creation through the sixth day. Who is God talking to on the sixth day when He said let us make man in our image, after our likeness? He was not telling man to let us make man in our image. So, who is He talking to when He said the sun, moon, and stars are for signs and seasons? He is talking to those that have dominion over us. So, any time you hear anyone tell you that they know anything because of the stars, you know that they do not seek our Father.

Thus saith the Lord, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. (Jeremiah 10:2)

Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from these things that shall come upon thee. Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame: there shall not be a coal to warm at, nor fire to sit before

it. Thus shall they be unto thee with whom thou hast laboured, even thy merchants, from thy youth: they shall wander every one to his quarter; none shall save thee. (Isaiah 47:13-15)

This was the first time I heard anybody mention that the signs of the rapture are there. No, there will be no sign given to this generation but me, the Son of Man.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

As explained in previous books, and in this one, I was in the belly of the earth for 3 days and e nights 30 years almost to the day when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost. But we are not to harp on all of that. I want to focus on how well the scriptures tell us, or better put, don't tell us that anything like the rapture will happen. In fact, aren't we supposed to follow Jesus? Let us listen to when Peter gets rebuked because he didn't think Jesus should be crucified.

From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him,

saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew 16:21-25)

We are told the same thing more than once, but I am only posting it one time. Notice how Peter turns into Satan all the sudden when tries to tell Jesus that he shouldn't die? But yet these people that think they are going to get raptured, think they shouldn't have to die? How does this make since?

Now let us listen to a few times in which we can hear that we are to rejoice in suffering with Christ and such.

Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel; And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God. For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake; Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me. (Philippians 1:27-30)

I must make a statement here. If you do not want to suffer, than you make the choice of not wanting to suffer with Christ.

And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; And

patience, experience; and experience, hope: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. (Romans 5:3-5)

My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. (James 1:2-3)

But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. (1 Peter 4:13)

Here is the only reason people want to be raptured, they do not want to suffer. But are not we to love our neighbor as ourselves? Are not we supposed to have a love and compassion for others?

Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: (1 Peter 3:8)

Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently: (1 Peter 1:22)

Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king. (1 Peter 2:17)

Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another; Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. Bless them which persecute you: bless,

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

and curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. (Romans 12:10-15)

We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death. (1 John 3:14)

Before going on with this chapter, I want to post the two greatest commandments. Then as you go through the rest of this chapter, ask yourself how this rapture concept makes any since following just these two commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

People that believe in this rapture concept, believe that they are loved more than others and God the Father is going to take them away to heaven and all the evil doers must stay and endure the wrath of God. So, here is what I hear when I hear someone claiming that they will be raptured. I am hearing this person or persons say that they are better than you. They are saying that God loves them more than you. I hear them saying that God favors them over you. I hear them saying that they do not love anyone other than themselves. Why? Because a true love for others is laying down your life for them, not being taken to safety while other go through havoc and total chaos. Our Father will show no man favor nor will have mercy on anyone. And I am just as He is, He will respect no man.

But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile: For there is no respect of persons with God. For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. Romans 2:10-13)

Wherefore now let the fear of the Lord be upon you; take heed and do it: for there is no iniquity with the Lord our God, nor respect of persons, nor taking of gifts. (2 Chronicles 19:7)

And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men. (Matthew 22:16)

Now I know that there are many that think that their ways are righteous, and they feel as if they deserve God's love. This is where I must ask, do these people they deserve this because this is what man tells them? Because this is surely not what the scriptures teach.

God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged. But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man) God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world? For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner? And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some



affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just. What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes. (Romans 3:4-18)

There lies the problem, those that believe in the rapture, have no fear of God. And the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom. These people hold themselves above everyone else. By their works, they are telling everyone that they are better for God. They are saying God loves them more. They are saying they deserve better treatment by God than others. I know many believe that we are not judged by our works, and to a point they are right, it is our spiritual works that we will be judged on. And as I am going to post an entire chapter on this, we will learn that we are all equal in our Father's eyes. There is not one of us that is better than any other. We all have transgressed our Father's law.

My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit

thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool. Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father

justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:1-26)

As you can see and hear, we are all transgressors of our Father's law. He created each of us since the beginning. There is not one person that has ever lived, living, or will live that He did not or will not create. He is the creator of all. Now let us listen to a parable that tells us not to think that we are better than any other.

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (Luke 18:9-14)

Are not you saying that you are better than others when you think you will be raptured? The more you exalt yourself while you are in the flesh, the more you will be abased. Or to put in simple terms, the more you hold yourself to be better than others, the more you will be knocked down, spiritually.

Then let us listen to a little bit of a prayer of Jesus. We are going to here how Jesus prays that God does not take out the chosen ones, but to protects them.

While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. (John 17:12-17)

If Jesus is going to take you out of the world, then why is he praying that our Father will not take you out of the world? Can you see and hear how selfish this rapture concept is? It has no love for anyone but yourself.

I have been showing you all that we are the house of God, and that God does not dwell in temples that have been made with hands. What I want to do now is listen to a parable that tells us to build this house on the Rock.

Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. (Matthew 7:24=27)

As shown earlier in this book, that Rock is the God of the Old testament. Now I want to show an area that we can hear how things will be shaken.

And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. (Hebrews 12:24-27)

We are being advised to listen to the voice of our Father. We are being told that this signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken and those things which cannot be shaken may remain. When I listen to this, I can't help but think that we are be told that if we have built our house on the Rock of the Old Testament, we will not be shaken and removed. But if you have not built your house on this Rock, you will be shaken and removed.

Let me ask a question, does not this rapture concept promote confidence of the flesh? If you are thinking that you are going to be raptured, you seem to be confident that you are right with God. With that being said, let us listen to this.

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe. Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; (Philippians 3:1-5)

We are being told right here that if you have confidence in the flesh, you are a Pharisee. I have been in hardcore, one on one, hands on training with the Father for several years now. Most days I feel that I can and do understand what He wants from me. But there are some days that I feel that I am doing everything wrong. Just by reading this book, you have heard how I must constantly be paying attention to everything all the time, just to try to understand what He is saying. I cannot nor will I allow my guard to fall because I do not want to mess it up. I have no confidence in my flesh because my flesh will always try to do things David's ways and not the God's ways. Now listen to what we are told in the scriptures.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one

of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. (Matthew 5:17-20)

Okay now that I have had my little e biblical rant if you will, we are going to look at a few areas in which people believe that the scriptures tell us that they will be raptured. And just as I did when the Father first called me to the Bible in 2011, I am going to explain how they are not saying you will be raptured. But now, I will be explaining this with more of an understanding than I had when our Father first called me the Bible. I am not going to do all the areas, but just some of the more popular areas.

Before we go on, I want to put something to rest right away. Many think that I am coming back to take them away. I have already shown you, I here only once in the end of the world. I have not been here before, and I am not coming back.

One of the first verses that I am seeing is Revelation, so I am going to post the verse, than explain it. And I am going to show you what the Father has been teaching me over the last 12 years.

Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. (Revelation 3:10)

First thing we need to be thinking about is when we are told about the crucifixion. What did Jesus do when he saw the disciples sleeping?

And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch

with me one hour? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done. And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. (Matthew 26:40-44)

And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless not what I will, but what thou wilt. And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one hour? Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak. And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words. And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither wist they what to answer him. And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. (Mark 14:35-40)

We can hear Jesus being troubled for the hour of his death was near. But yet he states that it is the Father's will and not his. He did not ask the Father to rapture him up or take him away from what was about to happen. In fact, we just listened to Jesus rebuke Peter about saying that Jesus shouldn't die. Then Jesus calls Peter Satan because he savors the ways of man and not of God. Are not we supposed to



take up our cross and follow him? Sounds like all those that want to be raptured, are not willing to follow Jesus and or me.

Now we need to be realizing that the King of kings, “the Father” dwells inside each and every person planet. When the hour comes upon us that Satan is loosed from inside of us, or better said, when the world realized that man is Satan. The King of all kings inside of us will keep all the ones that will do evil, away from us.

Then I am seeing one in the first book of 1 Thessalonians. Let us post that and then explain it as well.

And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come. (1 Thessalonians 1:10)

This is one that I could not explain back in 2011, but I can now. There is a chapter in the last book called *The Walking Dead*. This chapter explains how everybody in the world has been sentenced to death. It also explains how the world is walking dead, even though their heart is beating, their blood is pumping, and their breathing. And it shows how I was the first one to rise from the dead back in 2016. Over the last 8 plus years, this generation has rejected me, just as the scriptures teach. Yes, I think it has taken me a little longer than it should have for me to write these books. And that is why it has been 8 plus years instead of 7 years.

For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. (Luke 17:24-25)

Yes, you all have been waiting on me to learn what I have from our Father. You all have been waiting for me to write these books. Yes, this is the final book, and now our Father is going to reveal me. Then the dead in Christ will read these books, learn of our Father and

what He is doing and why He is doing what He is doing. Many will turn back to the Father, and the dead in Christ will rise and meet me in the clouds. Being how the dead in Christ will rise by turning back to our Father, He will keep all of the evil doers away from them as well. They will be delivered from the wrath to come.

Then we have one in Romans that some think this is telling them that they will be raptured.

Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. (Romans 5:9)

I have shown you all in the previous books, and even this one. I gave my life up in 2016, I have devoted every minute of my life to learning of our Father, who He is, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. When you all read these books, you are will be justified by my blood, and save from the wrath to come.

Then we have another in 1 Thessalonians but this time in a different chapter.

For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, (1 Thessalonians 5:9)

We can tie this one with the last one, when and if you decide to read these books and turn back to our Father, you will obtain your salvation.

Now we are going to look at something in 2<sup>nd</sup> book of Thessalonians. And this one will take some explaining.

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: (2 Thessalonians 2:7-8)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

The mystery of iniquity was explained in the last book in the chapter called, The sin of the world. This world refuses to listen to our Father and they use their imagination to make God the Father in the image of man.

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,  
And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into  
an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds,  
and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore  
God also gave them up to uncleanness through the  
lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own  
bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth  
of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the  
creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for  
ever. Amen. (Romans 1:22-25)

And we showed you all in this book, how we all were kicked out of heaven some time in the past because we thought we could obtain perfection by doing things differently than our perfect Father's ways. Now I am going to show something that has been brought up in previous books. And I was going to show it later in this chapter, but it needs to be brought up here with the part saying he be taken out of the way. Many people do not realize that the

So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. (Matthew 13:27-30)

In the third book, there is a chapter called, Where is Satan locked up? In the fourth book, there is a chapter called, The son of perdition revealed. The third book is placed inside the fourth book. They are the same chapter with a couple of modest addition in the fourth book. The Wicked has been revealed, but because this world has been rejecting me, they haven't realized it yet. The Wicked one is Satan that is inside of each person on the planet. That is why I say man is Satan. The light, or the Father, that is inside of us as well, is what makes us the harvest. We have been growing together. The tares will be taken first and burned. Do you really want to be the first ones that are taken out?

In all of the books, we have been showing in some way or another, we are reigning with Christ now, and this is not something that is coming at the end of the world. When people start reading these books, and realize that the end is upon us, Satan inside of everybody will know that he has but a short time, and massive panic will erupt throughout the world. That is how Satan get loosed because he is locked up inside of each and everyone of us.

Now we need to talk about how many think that they will be changed in a blink of an eye.

Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.  
(1 Corinthians 15:51-54)

This changing in a moment, in a twinkling of an eye is your choice. This is when you decide to take the vail off of your heart, and start leaning of our Father in the old testament.

And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which veil is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.  
(2 Corinthians 3:13-18)

The sudden change comes from within you. It is you that changes your mind as to learning about our Father through reading these books. You will suddenly take the veil off of your heart start to looking toward out Father. Because all of the books we have written, cover the entire King James Version of the Bible. We show how magnificent our Father is and has always been, since day one of creation. This will the process of you changing in corruptible into incorruptible, and your mortal changing into immortality. Notice that this is what will follow after this changing in a twinkling of the eye.

Now we are going to be looking at something that was brought up earlier in this book.

For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.  
(1 Thessalonians 4:16-18)

As we have shown, I am in the heavenly places sitting on the right side of our Father. When you read these books, you will start renewing your mind as well by starting to meditate on the scriptures. Then you too, will be in the clouds with me. Remember the website with all of the books floating in the clouds. [davidofpsalm89.com](http://davidofpsalm89.com).

Now some people want to say that we are given example of people being taken out of the way when our Father is getting ready to do destruction and such. Some say he took Noah out of harms way. No, Noah did not get taken away, he was instructed to build an ark so that he could survive what was coming. The same thing happen with Lot when it came to Lot being led out of the city when God was getting ready to destroy Sodom and Gomora. The Lot's wife looked back and was turned into a pillar of salt.

This is what I went through when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost back in 2016. I gave everything I owned away except the clothes on my back. I walked away from the marriage I was in. When I came back from the baptism, I was asked if I wanted the car that I gave away, back. I told Carl no. If I would have taken anything back, or stayed there for my wife, I would have been destroyed. This is teaching us that when we start living for our Father, we should not turn away from Him, or we will be partakers of the wrath that is coming.

We are told to have love and compassion for one another. We are told to put on the whole armor of God. We are told to put on the helmet of salvation. And we are told to put on charity. As you listen to the chapter I am getting ready to post, ask ourself why you would need to do have all this if your not going to be here when we will need it the most.

Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity,

I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing. Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity. (Romans 12:1-13)

If you want to be raptured, you have no love for any others, you want to be taken out so that you do not have to go through the pain and suffering that they will go through. Let us now listen to what will happen to all of those people that believe they will be raptured.

And will ye pollute me among my people for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to my people that hear your lies? Wherefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from

your arms, and will let the souls go, even the souls that ye hunt to make them fly. Your kerchiefs also will I tear, and deliver my people out of your hand, and they shall be no more in your hand to be hunted; and ye shall know that I am the Lord. Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life: Therefore ye shall see no more vanity, nor divine divinations: for I will deliver my people out of your hand: and ye shall know that I am the Lord. (Ezekiel 13:19-23)

Now let us think about this for a minute. What are you teaching people when you teach them that they will be raptured? You are teaching them that they do not need to know God the Father. You are teaching them that there is no need to learn of the Father because they will be taken out of harms way. How will anybody be taken out of harms way if they refuse to listen to the Father? The rapture concept teaches people that they are loved by God more than others. It teaches them that they do not have to suffer as Jesus did or does, even though we are to take up our cross that is made without hands, and follow Jesus. And as we have shown, we are all equal in our Father's eyes. If we break one law, we break them all. We all have broken at least one law, so we all are transgressors of God's law. None of us are righteous and not one of us deserve better treatment from Him if we refuse to listen to Him and Him only.

So, with that being said, get over yourself. You are no better than anyone else. You deserve no better treatment than anyone. Humble yourself, let down your guard and become as a little child. Be eager to learn of our perfect Father and His perfect ways. Strive to please Him rather than please men. Just as a little child does his or her parents.

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?



DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. (Matthew 18:1-4)



# THE CONCLUSION

Congratulations! You made it to the end of this book. I was going to call this the grand finale, because I truly believe this is the last book. But because I truly do not have confidence in my flesh, I am afraid to say with all certainty that this is the last book. Now as I have illustrated in this book, I do sometimes misunderstand what He is trying to say. So, there is a chance that He is saying this is the last book until after He reveals me. I am not sure if He will have me write another after that. But I am leaning toward that He will not because as shown in the last book, “At Midnight I Will Rise”, He had me show you all that we have 5 months or 150 days of hardcore life to survive through once He reveals me. Just as the flood was on the earth for a hundred fifty days in the days of Noah.

I hope that this book has enlightened you to start looking at everything from a spiritual perspective. I truly hope you are not someone that thinks that it is too late. As we have shown in this book, if you are still alive, it is not too late. I want to take the time to show you of a few times that we can hear our Father say His hand is still stretched out.

The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that

teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For wickedness burneth as the fire: it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall eat every man the flesh of his own arm: Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: and they together shall be against Judah. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:12-21)

Therefore is the anger of the Lord kindled against his people, and he hath stretched forth his hand against them, and hath smitten them: and the hills did tremble, and their carcasses were torn in the midst of the streets. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 5:25)

Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 10:4)

## DECLARING THE END FROM THE BEGINNING

It does not matter what you have done or not done, if you turn back to our Father at any time, it is not too late. But remember we do not know the day or hour. That is why it is time that all men repent.

And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:  
(Acts 17:30)

With that being said, I am going to close this book and series of books with a couple chapters that I feel the Father is telling me to close with. I am going to place two complete chapters that contain a lot of meaning for me, and I hope you can hear some of the same things that I hear when I listen to them. I hope the best for all in the times that are coming. And most of all, I hope our Father leads us together so that I can glorify Him and all that He has done, doing, and will do. All that He has said, saying, and will say.

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from

thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they

may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them. (John 17:1-26)

Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the Lord. Blessed are they that keep his testimonies, and that seek him with the whole heart. They also do no iniquity: they walk in his ways. Thou hast commanded us to keep thy precepts diligently. O that my ways were directed to keep thy statutes! Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect unto all thy commandments. I will praise thee with uprightness of heart, when I shall have learned thy righteous judgments. I will keep thy statutes: O forsake me not utterly. Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word. With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments. Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee. Blessed art thou, O Lord: teach me thy statutes. With my lips have I declared all the judgments of thy mouth. I have rejoiced in the way of thy testimonies, as much as in all riches. I will meditate in thy precepts, and have respect unto thy ways. I will delight myself in thy statutes: I will not forget thy word. Deal bountifully with thy servant, that I may live, and keep thy word. Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law. I am a stranger in the earth: hide not thy commandments from me. My soul breaketh for the longing that it hath unto thy

judgments at all times. Thou hast rebuked the proud that are cursed, which do err from thy commandments. Remove from me reproach and contempt; for I have kept thy testimonies. Princes also did sit and speak against me: but thy servant did meditate in thy statutes. Thy testimonies also are my delight and my counselors. My soul cleaveth unto the dust: quicken thou me according to thy word. I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me: teach me thy statutes. Make me to understand the way of thy precepts: so shall I talk of thy wondrous works. My soul melteth for heaviness: strengthen thou me according unto thy word. Remove from me the way of lying: and grant me thy law graciously. I have chosen the way of truth: thy judgments have I laid before me. I have stuck unto thy testimonies: O Lord, put me not to shame. I will run the way of thy commandments, when thou shalt enlarge my heart. Teach me, O Lord, the way of thy statutes; and I shall keep it unto the end. Give me understanding, and I shall keep thy law; yea, I shall observe it with my whole heart. Make me to go in the path of thy commandments; for therein do I delight. Incline my heart unto thy testimonies, and not to covetousness. Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity; and quicken thou me in thy way. Stablish thy word unto thy servant, who is devoted to thy fear. Turn away my reproach which I fear: for thy judgments are good. Behold, I have longed after thy precepts: quicken me in thy righteousness. Let thy mercies come also unto me, O Lord, even thy salvation, according to thy word. So shall I have wherewith to answer him that reproacheth me: for I trust in thy word. And take not the word of truth utterly out of my mouth; for I have hoped in thy judgments. So shall I keep thy law continually for ever and ever. And I will



walk at liberty: for I seek thy precepts. I will speak of thy testimonies also before kings, and will not be ashamed. And I will delight myself in thy commandments, which I have loved. My hands also will I lift up unto thy commandments, which I have loved; and I will meditate in thy statutes. Remember the word unto thy servant, upon which thou hast caused me to hope. This is my comfort in my affliction: for thy word hath quickened me. The proud have had me greatly in derision: yet have I not declined from thy law. I remembered thy judgments of old, O Lord; and have comforted myself. Horror hath taken hold upon me because of the wicked that forsake thy law. Thy statutes have been my songs in the house of my pilgrimage. I have remembered thy name, O Lord, in the night, and have kept thy law. This I had, because I kept thy precepts. Thou art my portion, O Lord: I have said that I would keep thy words. I intreated thy favour with my whole heart: be merciful unto me according to thy word. I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto thy testimonies. I made haste, and delayed not to keep thy commandments. The bands of the wicked have robbed me: but I have not forgotten thy law. At midnight I will rise to give thanks unto thee because of thy righteous judgments. I am a companion of all them that fear thee, and of them that keep thy precepts. The earth, O Lord, is full of thy mercy: teach me thy statutes. Thou hast dealt well with thy servant, O Lord, according unto thy word. Teach me good judgment and knowledge: for I have believed thy commandments. Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy word. Thou art good, and doest good; teach me thy statutes. The proud have forged a lie against me: but I will keep thy precepts with my whole heart. Their heart is as fat

as grease; but I delight in thy law. It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn thy statutes. The law of thy mouth is better unto me than thousands of gold and silver. Thy hands have made me and fashioned me: give me understanding, that I may learn thy commandments. They that fear thee will be glad when they see me; because I have hoped in thy word. I know, O Lord, that thy judgments are right, and that thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me. Let, I pray thee, thy merciful kindness be for my comfort, according to thy word unto thy servant. Let thy tender mercies come unto me, that I may live: for thy law is my delight. Let the proud be ashamed; for they dealt perversely with me without a cause: but I will meditate in thy precepts. Let those that fear thee turn unto me, and those that have known thy testimonies. Let my heart be sound in thy statutes; that I be not ashamed. My soul fainteth for thy salvation: but I hope in thy word. Mine eyes fail for thy word, saying, When wilt thou comfort me? For I am become like a bottle in the smoke; yet do I not forget thy statutes. How many are the days of thy servant? when wilt thou execute judgment on them that persecute me? The proud have digged pits for me, which are not after thy law. All thy commandments are faithful: they persecute me wrongfully; help thou me. They had almost consumed me upon earth; but I forsook not thy precepts. Quicken me after thy lovingkindness; so shall I keep the testimony of thy mouth. For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. They continue this day according to thine ordinances: for all are thy servants. Unless thy law had been my delights, I should then have perished in mine affliction. I will never forget thy precepts: for with

them thou hast quickened me. I am thine, save me: for I have sought thy precepts. The wicked have waited for me to destroy me: but I will consider thy testimonies. I have seen an end of all perfection: but thy commandment is exceeding broad. O how love I thy law! it is my meditation all the day. Thou through thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies: for they are ever with me. I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep thy precepts. I have refrained my feet from every evil way, that I might keep thy word. I have not departed from thy judgments: for thou hast taught me. How sweet are thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth! Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way. Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path. I have sworn, and I will perform it, that I will keep thy righteous judgments. I am afflicted very much: quicken me, O Lord, according unto thy word. Accept, I beseech thee, the freewill offerings of my mouth, O Lord, and teach me thy judgments. My soul is continually in my hand: yet do I not forget thy law. The wicked have laid a snare for me: yet I erred not from thy precepts. Thy testimonies have I taken as an heritage for ever: for they are the rejoicing of my heart. I have inclined mine heart to perform thy statutes alway, even unto the end. I hate vain thoughts: but thy law do I love. Thou art my hiding place and my shield: I hope in thy word. Depart from me, ye evildoers: for I will keep the commandments of my God. Uphold me according unto thy word, that I may live: and let me not be ashamed of my hope. Hold thou me up, and I shall be safe: and I will have respect unto thy statutes

continually. Thou hast trodden down all them that err from thy statutes: for their deceit is falsehood. Thou puttest away all the wicked of the earth like dross: therefore I love thy testimonies. My flesh trembleth for fear of thee; and I am afraid of thy judgments. I have done judgment and justice: leave me not to mine oppressors. Be surety for thy servant for good: let not the proud oppress me. Mine eyes fail for thy salvation, and for the word of thy righteousness. Deal with thy servant according unto thy mercy, and teach me thy statutes. I am thy servant; give me understanding, that I may know thy testimonies. It is time for thee, Lord, to work: for they have made void thy law. Therefore I love thy commandments above gold; yea, above fine gold. Therefore I esteem all thy precepts concerning all things to be right; and I hate every false way. Thy testimonies are wonderful: therefore doth my soul keep them. The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple. I opened my mouth, and panted: for I longed for thy commandments. Look thou upon me, and be merciful unto me, as thou usest to do unto those that love thy name. Order my steps in thy word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me. Deliver me from the oppression of man: so will I keep thy precepts. Make thy face to shine upon thy servant; and teach me thy statutes. Rivers of waters run down mine eyes, because they keep not thy law. Righteous art thou, O Lord, and upright are thy judgments. Thy testimonies that thou hast commanded are righteous and very faithful. My zeal hath consumed me, because mine enemies have forgotten thy words. Thy word is very pure: therefore thy servant loveth it. I am small and despised: yet do not I forget thy precepts. Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.

Trouble and anguish have taken hold on me: yet thy commandments are my delights. The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: give me understanding, and I shall live. I cried with my whole heart; hear me, O Lord: I will keep thy statutes. I cried unto thee; save me, and I shall keep thy testimonies. I prevented the dawning of the morning, and cried: I hoped in thy word. Mine eyes prevent the night watches, that I might meditate in thy word. Hear my voice according unto thy lovingkindness: O Lord, quicken me according to thy judgment. They draw nigh that follow after mischief: they are far from thy law. Thou art near, O Lord; and all thy commandments are truth. Concerning thy testimonies, I have known of old that thou hast founded them for ever. Consider mine affliction, and deliver me: for I do not forget thy law. Plead my cause, and deliver me: quicken me according to thy word. Salvation is far from the wicked: for they seek not thy statutes. Great are thy tender mercies, O Lord: quicken me according to thy judgments. Many are my persecutors and mine enemies; yet do I not decline from thy testimonies. I beheld the transgressors, and was grieved; because they kept not thy word. Consider how I love thy precepts: quicken me, O Lord, according to thy lovingkindness. Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. Princes have persecuted me without a cause: but my heart standeth in awe of thy word. I rejoice at thy word, as one that findeth great spoil. I hate and abhor lying: but thy law do I love. Seven times a day do I praise thee because of thy righteous judgments. Great peace have they which love thy law: and nothing shall offend them. Lord, I have hoped for thy salvation, and done thy commandments. My soul hath kept thy

DAVID JENKINS

testimonies; and I love them exceedingly. I have kept thy precepts and thy testimonies: for all my ways are before thee. Let my cry come near before thee, O Lord: give me understanding according to thy word. Let my supplication come before thee: deliver me according to thy word. My lips shall utter praise, when thou hast taught me thy statutes. My tongue shall speak of thy word: for all thy commandments are righteousness. Let thine hand help me; for I have chosen thy precepts. I have longed for thy salvation, O Lord; and thy law is my delight. Let my soul live, and it shall praise thee; and let thy judgments help me. I have gone astray like a lost sheep; seek thy servant; for I do not forget thy commandments. (Psalm 119:1-176)

Amen!



